LES

PHILIPPINES

HISTOIRE, GÉOGRAPHIE, MŒURS

AGRICULTURE, INDUSTRIE

ET

COMMERCE

DES COLONIES ESPAGNOLES DANS L'OCÉANIE.

PAR J. MALLAT

CHEVALIER DE LA LÉGION D'HONNEUR, MEMBRE DE LA SOCIÉTÉ DE GÉOGRAPHIE ET DE PLUSIEURS SOCIÉTÉS SAVANTES FRANÇAISES ET ÉTRANGÈRES.

TOME PREMIER.

BIBLIOTECA NACIONAL

PARIS

ARTHUS BERTRAND, ÉDITEUR

LIBRAIRE DE LA SOCIÉTÉ DE GÉOGRAPHIE

23, RUE HAUTEFEUILLE.

1846

English translation of Volume 1 of the original French Edition was started 17 August 2019 using the internet facility Google translate by Dominador N. Marcaida Jr., Camaligan, Camarines Sur, Philippines.

P R E F A C E.

I just finished a long journey of observations aiming at accomplishing a mission that I have long proposed, and it is in part the result of these observations that I submit today to advertising.

A two-year stay in Spain had already offered a vast field to my studies when, eager to continue, I undertook a first trip to the islands Philippines. Everything was new to me in this country whose history had taught me only the name; occupied whole to serious research, I felt without stop the need to increase them, and I went to this effect in China in 1838. When I returned, I did not than touching the Philippines to get to Batavia, this beautiful capital of the Dutch government, in India, where everything for me had to be equally new. After being for the third time returned to Manila and have completed my notes on the archipelago of Philippines, I took the sea and finally revisited France, in December 4,842; a long absence and tribulations of a voluntary exile had hitherto kept far away.

I recently published some essays and I put even the last hand at a general work on the three empires that I have just visited, when I see obliged to give up this project; the government I am in charge of a mission, the result of my travels and my studies, and I must neglect everything to make myself in the seas I barely left. In impossibility where I find myself giving all of my work, I decide to offer today only one party to the public, and I entrust to foreign hands the care difficult to edit in my absence. My goal being only useful, I would consider myself happy that the reader appreciated my position and the motives who lead me and that his indulgence forgive, in favor from the bottom, to some inevitable negligence in the form.

THE PHILIPPINES.

FIRST CHAPTER.

DISCOVERING THE PHILIPPINES.

Discovery of the isthmus of Panama by Vasco Nunez de Balboa. - That of the Pacific Sea. Magellan suspects the existence of a passage to the south of America. He proposes the search to the King of Portugal, who rejects it. The King of Spain welcomes him, signs agreements with him, and grants him five ships. He departs from Seville.-Painful navigation. -Discover the Strait of Magellan.- Loss of two buildings.- Crossing from the Pacific Sea. - Arrival in Mindanao. - Death of Magellan. - He is replaced by Barbosa. - Perfidy of the king of Cebu. – Barbosa is replaced by Espinosa.- This one by del Cano.-Arrival in Borneo.- Arrival to Tidor. -A single building leaves for Spain. – Cruelty Governor of Cape Verde. - Back to Spain. - Awards granted to del Cano.

Following in the footsteps of Christopher Columbus, Vasco Nunez de Balboa, born in Xerez de Badajoz, after having to long labors and to have run great dangers, at the isthmus of Panama, which was then called Darien.

Hungry for glory and conquest, ardent for discoveries he entered these mountainous and wild lands, fighter, in its painful march, warrior tribes and pushing them back

before him to clear a passage; brutal populations whose memory would remain the most shameful vices, if this accusation became suspicious in the mouths of enemies who showed themselves full of ferocity.

Arrived, after a thousand dangers, to the top of the cordilière from Panama, his view extended to this sea, the object of his research. It was September 25, 1515: four days still tiresome and ever-changing dangers were employees to go down to the shore. There, Balboa hurried to set foot in the sea; then, entering there until the belt, he took his sword with one hand, his shield the other, and told the Castilians and the indios who bordered the strike: "Be all witnesses that I take possession of this sea, for the crown of Gastille, on behalf of his King Charles V, and this sword will keep his dominion." He gave this part of the sea the name of San Miguel, from the day he took possession of it.

We will not recall that Balboa, having been, in the first moment, filled with favors by the king, was later exposed to odious and widespread slanders by the treacherous jealousy of his father-in-law, Pedro Arias, and by after which he lost his head.

Once the Pacific Ocean is discovered, the thought that America was ending at its southern end, by a point of land similar to the Cape of Good Hope, seemed to have to come naturally to the minds of browsers. It was Hernando de Magalhaens, Portuguese of birth, better known in France under the name of Magellan, who had the first idea; and immediately he proposed to the king, Dom Manuel the bold project of seeking, by these seas, a new passage to go to Moluccas *.

The King of Portugal treated these plans of reveries and did not grant no confidence in Magellan's offers. This one, piqued the indifference shown to him, resolved to seek elsewhere a government more able to appreciate it. He surrendered, accompanied by his compatriot, Ruy Falero or Talero, who enjoyed the reputation of a great cosmographer, at the court of Charles V, then at Valladolid. Then, holding in hand a globe well done for the time, he traced there, in the presence of the king, the road he was proposing to follow, and promised the monarch to arrive at the Moluccas, country from which the Portuguese drew the spices, by a way opposite to the one they used to take, adding that under the writ of Alexander VI, sent to Rome May 4, 1495, the crown of Castile would acquire by that a right to the property of these islands, equal to that of the Portuguese.

At the same time, the two petitioners, Bishop of Burgos, Don Rodríguez de Fonseca, Minister in charge of Indian affairs, who tasted a project he felt all the importance; he communicated it to the grand chancellor, who submitted it a second time to the king, as well as to the first Minister, M. de Gèbres.

Magellan was recalled in the presence of the Emperor; he started again his demonstration on the globe where he had produced the lines drawn by his friend Serrano, the very one who had discovered the Moluccas; he replied from the success of his enterprise of the moment when the emperor deigned to grant him its protection.

**This name, that the historian Juan de la Concepción derives from the word hebrew malach, comes from moloc or moluco, who, in the language of the country, means what is most exquisite and delicious.*

Charles V. understood this, and, not doubting that he had deal with a man of honor, merit and courage, accepted his proposals, notwithstanding the intrigues of the ambassador from Portugal, Alonso de Acosta, who did not neglect nothing to defeat Magellan's plan.

An act was drawn up accordingly, by which Magellan undertook to discover, within the limits of recognized countries by the pope as belonging to the crown of Spain, islands rich in grocery stores and where nobody, while the space of ten years, could not approach in the same way, without the permission of the King, who alone should have the right to to trade. On the net profit of this trade, two adventurers were to receive the twentieth part, and the king granted them, besides, the government of the islands that they would discover, with the title of adelanlado, transmissible to their heirs but under the supreme authority of the crown from Castile; it was recognized, moreover, that they could embark, on Her Majesty's ships, merchandise for a value of 1,000 ducats; if they discovered more than six islands they had to receive the fifteenth part of the benefits that would be removed from two of them; and the fifth net of what ships would charge the first expedition had to belong to them; it was a real company formed between a king and his subjects, the first ever existed and other nations imitated later. It's not only by such associations between governments and the citizens, what can these big companies succeed which affect both religious, political and social interests, business of nations. So all the forces of a State tend towards the same goal; they support each other, and success becomes the result of their common efforts.

Five ships from the port of 60 to 150 tons and assembled by two hundred and thirty-four crewmen were armed for this expedition ; the king appointed the different officers and especially those who had to keep the accounts; he ordered, in addition, that, if Magellan were to die during I travel, the command would pass to Ruy Talero.

These conventions made, Magellan went to Seville to to make the necessary arrangements with the house of contractación; there, he found that the money was lacking for the armament and the equipment of the ships, and things would have dragged in length without the patriotism of the merchants of Seville, who advanced to the government the necessary sum.

However, some opinions which reached the king made him fear of misunderstanding between the two commanders, which could have seriously affected the success of the company; consequently, taking as a pretext the state of health of Ruy Talero, who was really very precarious, Charles the reads thanks with great compliments, and Magellan remained alone at the head of the expedition; then, when all preparations were completed and the appointments made, the standard Royal was sent to Seville and handed over to Magellan in the Church of St. Mary of Victory. At the same time, to the custom of Castile, he swore solemnly to fulfill his journey with all fidelity, as a loyal about His Majesty; then he received, in turn, the oath of captains and officers of the squadron, who promised to to follow and to obey him in all things. This ceremony offered the most beautiful show, further enhanced by thought that the great monarch who ruled then Spain knew to welcome and encourage genius wherever he met him, while the merchants of Seville had generously associated with the noble example that the prince their had given.

Finally, on August 19, 1519, Magellan, after having made God of public prayers for him and for his people, went out of Seville with his squadron; he was riding the ship Trinidad. His first break was in the Canary Islands, where he took on board food and water; after which he threw himself within the seas.

Arrested first in the calm region, then surprised contrary winds and storms, it was only the December 13 that he anchored in the bay of Rio-Janeiro, where he procured corn, fruit and poultry in exchangeobjects of a small value.

He continued his journey along the shores of America southern, often exposed to the greatest dangers. Although fishing gave him abundant fish, and hunting, penguins and seals, however, trump to take, food was scarce; the crews were murmuring and some of the ships threatened to abandon the expedition. The chief restrained the men of his building by a speech in which he reminded them that their suffering were only fleeting, and they would not be long in arriving in an abundant and rich country, where they would roll on gold and from where they would bring back treasures that would put them to even to spend the rest of their lives in opulence at within their family. As for him, he was determined to succeed in his business or to die, and he could not be persuaded that there was a Spanish enough coward to miss his oaths and his duty.

No sooner had Magellan finished speaking than he was warned. that Captain Mendoza was about to rise; he immediately put to sea a canoe mounted by five men he charged to carry a letter to Mendoza and to kill him while he reads it; the rowboat followed with thirty determined men, to lend, if necessary, help to the boat. The commander's orders were punctually executed; the traitor Mendoza was put to death, his body, cut into four quarters, was suspended yards of his ship, and everything returned to obedience. This expeditious and severe justice saved the expedition.

As we advanced in the Antarctic regions, navigation became more dangerous and the cold more intense. Already one of the buildings had been lost; others were private part of their wings; the rudder of that of Magellan was broken, and it was in the middle of the snow that we had to work on fixing it.

Once the first murmurs are appeased, the expedition seemed animated by a new courage; though she would have been rationing from the beginning and that the buildings were partly helpless, intrepid men, faithful to their oath and confidence in God, which we never forget in the peril and they constantly invoked, these men did not recoil before any danger, did not refuse to sacrifice, while their leader, unshakable in his deses, continued his adventurous journey without worrying return means.

Almost a year had passed since their departure when, at In August 1520, their imperfect instruments gave them 49 ° 18 '' of southern latitude, the course being to the south. Magellan ordered the other ships to go and recognize all directions; they returned after five days, announcing that they had found the passage they were looking for commanding officer. They had sailed, they said, for three days, in the midst of very strong currents and in an arm of sea that had seemed to them to be a strait because they did not have not found the end. Magellan, not doubting that he had, in effect, discovered a way out, decided to enter the canal to wet there.

On October 28, they were west of Cape Saint-Severin, and, as one of the ships sent in reconnaissance had long sailed pretty much in the same direction without finding a way out, Magellan, convinced that this was the passage which was to lead him to the South Sea, gave in the pass.

There was only one for three months food on board. Magellan, having assembled his officers in council, began by telling them frankly about the situation things, then he added that, once out of the strait, they would inevitably find an open sea that would lead them in righteousness and in a short time in the Moluccas; only rest, he was determined to bear all the privations rather than to give up his trip, if he were to eat the leather that covered the yards and cables of his building: he had pledged his promise to the emperor and he hoped that God would help him to fulfill it. Only one of the officers welcomed badly the words of the chief; all the others ranged from his notice and acknowledged that it would be shameful to return Spain without having succeeded in their business. Magellan taking advantage of this unanimous support, had the squadron published that anyone who would talk about going back would punished with death.

On the 1st of November, after fifteen months of the most painful navigation, the squadron came out of the strait to which Magellan gave his name and entered the vast Pacific Sea; she was unfortunately reduced to three ships because the Santiago had been shipwrecked, and as to the San Antonio that had been sent in discovery, not having joined his preserves, one judged that he had returned to Spain.

The intrepid Magellan has been crisscrossing for thirty days the ocean whose discovery had cost him so much trouble and of works, had exposed him to so many privations and dangers; he had first gone north, then north-west, without meeting any land. The food had become so rare, that the rations were given only per ounce; the water was murky, and the crews, to cook their rice, were obliged to use sea water *. Twenty men had succumbed, and consternation had seized when, for the first time, they saw two small islands; but unfortunately! they were uninhabited and did not offer no resources: they were called *Desventuradas islas*, unfortunate islands.

** It would be desirable, as we have already noted other bet, that in the French navy, in IndoChine,in the Marquesas and elsewhere,the biscuit or flour, so often spoiled, is substituted for rice boiled with water:but for that it would be necessary to prepare it and add to it suitable months.*

Exhausted from fatigue, no longer having food or water, but not discouraging and full of confidence in divine mercy, they had already traveled the South Sea during 2,000 leagues without having discovered anything, when the Saturday of Lazarus, Eve of the Passion, "God," says the historian Juan de la Concepción, remembering these floating houses and these unfortunate distraught, wanted well to come down to help their miseries." That day, they recognized two pretty islands, inhabited by savages, where they They refreshed themselves and obtained food of every kind. These islands, to which Magellan gave the name of San Lázaro, are now known as Marianas; they form a group of which Magellan discovered the greatest part: an Indian whom he had taken with him and who understood the language of the inhabitants served them as interpreter.

The expedition then headed south-west, where she was soon to discover a point of land she called Cape San Agustín, which formed the southeastern tip of the island from Mindanao; from there she went up north, side by side the gold province named today Caraga. She entered in the Surigao Strait (Siargao) and came to anchor near the small island of Limasagua, where she found natives of a peaceful character, which supplied him with everything she needed. Magellan, to recognize the services that the inhabitants returned to him, granted to their chief the title of prince; then, having received information from them about the Gulf and Butuan River, located on the northern coast from the island of Mindanao and south of Limasagua, where he was then, he sent an armed boat, with his interpreter, to request food and offer exchanges: the king or sultan sent him some goats, some pigs and a supply of rice.

On Easter Sunday, Magellan went in nobody in the village of Butuan, in the province of Caraga; he raised an altar decorated with foliage and flowers, and sent down ashore the crews of his three ships, to assist at the first Mass that would have ever been celebrated in these distant places, and that he was quick to say to give thanks to the god of the seas for the protection he had granted to the expedition. The natives attended peacefully at the ceremony, and Magellan treated them with the most great kindness; he planted, at the top of a mound, the sacred emblem of Christianity and took possession, by a solemn act, from the island of Mindanao, for the crown of Castile, in the name of the Emperor and King Charles V.

He then learned that, not far from there, there was a fertile island, ruled by one of the parents of the Prince of Limasagua, and he asked pilots to take him there; the Prince himself accompanied him, followed by some indios. They sailed between the islands of Bohol and Leijte, and arrived to the island of Cebu, in front of the city of that name. More than two thousand men armed with spears and rondaches presented before them on the shore.

The indio king offered them food, in exchange for others objects, and offered them a solemn covenant to which Magellan acceded. The two princes bled in the chest and mutually bleed their blood, to seal the treaty to the country's way. Artillery bursts were fired the honor of the covenant, but the noise so terrified the natives, that there was not one left on the beach, and he is likely that this circumstance would have had unfortunate consequences if peace had not been made.

Food in abundance, consisting of poultry, pigs, goats, rice, coconut and fruits of different species. were exchanged for mirrors, bells and glassware. We built on the ground a house where we say mass for soldiers and sailors; the king, the queen and the princes attended, marveled and asked what it meant this ceremony. When it was explained to them meaning, they expressed the desire to be Christians, in order to look like to the foreigners who inspired them with so much admiration. We hastened to prepare them, after which we administered the baptism with a great pomp; the elite of the The population was soon following their example, and the feast was ended with entertainment, games and meals.

The respect that the indios showed for the King of Spain, and in general all their conduct, rained so much at Magellan, that he wanted to give them, in turn, proof of his affection. They had for irreconcilable enemy the king from the small island of Mactan, facing Cebu; Magellan went to fight with fifty of his men: after having gained

several benefits, he perished, in this unfortunate expedition, victim of a zeal badly heard. He fell pierced with arrows, August 26, 1521.

Duarte Barbosa, cousin of Magellan, was chosen in his place to order the shipment; the king of Cebu having invited him at dinner, Juan Serrano, one of his captains, made in vain the greater efforts to prevent him from accepting it, in reminding him that it would be imprudent to leave the ship. Barbosa went there with twenty-six people, but the treacherous monarch made them all murder during the feast. Serrano was the only one who escaped this massacre; he is presented naked on the beach and shouted from afar to his companions that they sent him enough to pay his ransom; but these, fearing that he himself was the innocent instrument of a new perfidy, abandoned him and set sail for the island of Borneo, from where they intended to continue their journey the search for the Moluccas; because, despite their misfortunes, they always remained faithful to the instructions that they had been given.

As a result of the new loss they had just experienced, they understood that they were not enough people to safely maneuver their three buildings; they decided so to burn Concepción, which was the oldest and besides, in very bad condition. They elected for chef Juan Caraballo, and after several new adventures, they approached in the island of Borneo, where they anchored in a harbor desert, to refurnish and embark fresh provisions.
Having recognized that Caraballo did not have the necessary talents for commandment they appointed in his place Gonzalo Gómez de Espinosa. At the same time Juan Sebastien del Cano was named captain of the Victoria. Having seized with a malaise junk loaded with coconut, they thought they could trust his pilot; but this one deceived and gave the ships a wrong direction, though, to intimidate him, they would have loaded him with chains and placed at the stern. However, despite this new counter-time, the expedition arrived on November 8 in Tidor, one of the Maluku Islands, the purpose of their long and painful journey.

The more danger we ran in a company, the more we feels happy and relieved when we have managed to overcome them. If even the most intrepid sailors can to keep from getting pale when the storm threatens to to engulf in the waves, as soon as calm is reborn they soon forgot their fears. Our adventurers were finally arrived in the Moluccas; they saluted with artillery dumps this place so desired; but their hearts saddened themselves thinking that their noble Magellan leader was no longer there to share their happiness.

Wet at Tidor, an island near Ternate, they received the visits of his ruler Almanzor, of Corrala, lord of Ternate, nephew of Almanzor, and Luzuf, king of Gilolo; they offered them presents, and the princes offered form an alliance with the King of Spain. All three sent presents in turn, accompanied by letters in which they promised not only to stay always friends of the King of Spain, but still to provide Spanish spices, whenever they bring them in exchange for cloth, silks and canvas. They recognized themselves vassals of the Spanish crown, and one of them solicited help against the Portuguese, who had killed his father. The moment was most favorable to attach these people, already so well disposed by the present they had been offered.

We can not, it seems, enough admire the great expeditions of these first browsers. When we compare the few means with which they undertook them to the vast resources available today, we can only be struck by the courage and firmness displayed by their leaders and the high intelligence with which they know to combine, according to the occasion, gentleness with severity.

It was finally time to think of the return; part of the loading was already carried out in cloves purchased at because of 2 ducats the 4 quintals, when we realized that Trinidad, which was still honored with the title of captain, had a waterway. It was decided while the Victoria, commanded by del Cano, would leave with sixty men crew and return alone to Spain by the known to the Portuguese, so they charged her with everything that they had more precious. This vessel also wore confidential letters from the King of the Moluccas to the King of Spain.

The Victoria set sail at the beginning of 1522, two and a half years after leaving Spain. Remembering all that we had suffered, in coming, from the insufficiency of provisions, the captain embarked as much as he could, and took in addition, in Timor, sandalwood, ginger, gold and cinnamon. Del Cano went, by several passages dangerous, on the Strait of Sunda, and from there into the Indian ocean, sea which was still unknown to him; he doubled the course of Bonne-Espérance by 42 "S. Already, despite their precautions, provisions began to fail and they were beaten storms in these open places to all the winds. Nevertheless the captain was decided do not go anywhere before arriving in Spain. A force majeure forced them to release to Cape Verde, where they asked Negroes to help work pumps and replace the sailors, who, having failed to resist so much privation and fatigue remained lying on the bridge almost without movement. But Cape Verde was a Portuguese colony. The governor, demanding man and jealous, instead of rescuing our intrepid navigators, I in prison the people we had sent ashore, in the hope to force them to declare where they had pulled their cargo. Del Cano, on hearing this circumstance, hastily set sail, and, making strength of sails, he thus arrived at San Lucar of Barameda, September 6, 1522, three years and one month after his departure, and not bringing back with him, on the two hundred thirty-four crewmen who had embarked to Seville, that eighteen sailors, thin, defeated, who looked like to living skeletons.

It was learned later that the ship Trinidad, which had repaired his damage, having left to go to Panama, had taken by the Portuguese because he had touched the Moluccas. This was the end of this trip, famous by many discovered, and which seems doubly worthy of the admiration of posterity, when we reflect that it was accomplished at a time when sailing on unknown seas offered to solve the most difficult problems. The expedition had traveled, according to his esteem, about 14,000 leagues, with the most imperfect and almost groping instruments, in places whose existence was scarcely suspected.

Del Cano, this great captain, was the first to go around of the globe, in a time when doubts still existed about sphericity of the earth. Little known before his departure, hardly had one spoke to him during the trip. He had embarked as Master, his return saw him captain. The emperor ennobles him, nicknamed him the great cosmographer, the hydrographer badge, and gave him as a weapon a terrestrial globe, with the motto: *Hic primus geometres, hic primus circumdedit me*.

CHAPTER II.
FOLLOWING THE DISCOVERY OF THE PHILIPPINES.

Second expedition, that of Loaïsa. - Death of the commander. – Arrivals at Mariana Islands. - We change the name to that of Larrons Islands (Ladrones) .- There is a Spaniard from the Magellan Fleet in Mindanao. - Death of Salazar, successor of Loaïsa. - He is replaced The squadron arrives at Tidor. -Mort d'Iniguez.- From the Torre replace him. - A fort is built at Tidon - Saavedra Expedition. - She takes possession of the Ladrones - She delivers the Spaniards who have remained to Tidor. - Treaty between Spain and Portugal concerning the Moluccas. - Villalobos Expedition. - He discovers several islands in the South Sea.- The expedition anchors at Sarragan. - Perfidy of the savages. - Disette. - May sow. -Villalobos gives to the Philippines the name they bear today.- It is forced, by contrary winds, to go to Gilolo.-He builds a fort there.-He dies of sorrow for having missed his word by touching the Moluccas, and he is assisted, at his last moments, by St. Francis Xavier.- The remains of his expedition come back to Europe in different ways. - Legaspi Expedition and Urdaneta.- She arrives in the Philippines.-Inducement of the indios. - Many of them are baptized. - Legaspi arrives at Luzon; - Betrayal of Rajah Soliman. - Colonization. - Foundation of city of Santo Number of Dios, in Cebu. - Tributo real. -Mainile. - New betrayal of Rajah Soliman.-Foundation of Manila.-Clemency of the governor. - Manila fire. - Legaspi opens the trade with the Chiuois. - Arrival of new missionaries. - Death of Legaspi. - Reflections on the work of the religious.

The Emperor, amazed by the stories that were made to him and having learned that Tidor had been left with five Spaniards in quality of factors, ordered to prepare a second expedition for these islands. She sailed from Corunna in June 1524 under the command of Commander Juan Garcia José de Loaïsa. Composed of seven ships, one chooses, to order them, the most distinguished captains, among whom are found Sebastien del Cano and Andrea de Urdaneta, who more later entered the Augustinian order and led the expedition that the famous Legaspi led to the Philippine Islands. The May 25, 1525, the ship entered the South Sea by the Strait from Magellan. Commander Loaïsa having died, he was replaced by Sebastien del Cano, in accordance with taken in advance by the king; this one, unfortunately, did not survive long before his predecessor.

After touching various points of the Pacific Sea, the expedition arrived at the Marianas Islands, to which she gave also the name of Larron Islands (Ladrones), well deserved by the conduct which the natives of the country held with them. They were scarcely in sight of the first two islands of this group, a boat driven by one man approached from them, and, to their astonishment, the one who mounted it spoke to them in good spanish. "Welcome," said he, "Captain "And all the company: come here, come; know that I have "Is part of Magellan's fleet; I am one of those "Who fled from the capitane ship, Trinidad, "Commanded by Espinosa, because he died a lot " people. There were five of us: all my companions "Were killed by the indios; I went from the island that is "More at sunset in the one I live in today and where "I stand as I can. I am from "Galicia, my name is Gonzalo de Vigo; I know a lot "Well the language of the islanders."

Fearing the punishment his desertion deserved, he did not did not want, despite the good reception he had been on board before having received, on behalf of the King, a promise of forgiveness: as soon as he had obtained it, he had a great number of boats

laden with coconut, bananas, sweet potatoes, rice, fish, salt and fruits of any kind, that we paid by nails and old scrap. These fresh provisions were of great relief for crews that deprivation, fatigue and bad food had already decimated.

The Ladrones, the expedition headed for Mindanao that she recognized on October 2nd; Salazar, who, like us said above, was dead, had been replaced in the commanded by Martin Iniguez, already a squadron general. From Mindanao, where we took provisions and water, we wanted to go to Cebu, but contrary winds forced the expedition to be released to the Moluccas; and, December 31, 1536, she anchored at Tidor, where she was joined by some of the ships that a hurricane had separated from the entrance to the South Sea; they were in the most deplorable.

The Spaniards found the little king of Tidor at war with the Portuguese, who wanted revenge for what he had welcomed Magellan's squadron; so we were obliged to take up his defense, and several battles were fought. In the course of these hostilities, General Iñiguez died following the moral penalties and fatigues he had experienced. Crews reduced to one hundred and twenty men, not feeling not strong enough to undertake to return to Europe, went down to the ground and built a fort there; they had elected Hernando de la Torre to order them.

Meanwhile, the King of Spain, still unaware of the disasters of this expedition and well resolved to follow the project that he had formed, was thinking of organizing a third; he rightly thought he would spare her a lot of time, of expenses and dangers from a port of America. As a result, Fernand Cortez, governor from Mexico, sent by order of the King, from the port of Silguallaneo, three ships armed with thirty guns, mounted per hundred ten men loaded with abundant provisions and excellent exchange objects. This expedition sailed on October 31, 1528 under the command of Alonzo de Saavedra; she first touched the Larrons Islands, which she took possession of in the name of the King of Spain; from there she went to Mindanao, where she embarked provisions; then she visited various points of the surrounding islands, and ends up going to Tidor, where she found the hundred and twenty Spaniards, unfortunate debris of Laoisa's expedition, locked up in the small fort they had raised; they received Saavedra as a tutelary angel. Twice they had embarked to try to return in New Spain, and twice obliged to return by the impossibility of maneuvering their buildings, they had been forced to put themselves almost at the discretion Portuguese.

The Moluccas were an object of discussion always between the courts of Spain and Portugal, which almost brought a break between the two nations; we have finished however, by agreement, and a treaty was concluded in 1559, by which the King of Spain, for a sum of money that the King of Portugal lent him, renounced all pretensions to the Maluku trade.

This arranged affair, the emperor, always busy with ideas conquest and expansion, decided that a fourth expedition would be sent, either to the Maluku Islands, but to islands that were then called del Poniente (of the sunset), the position and even, in some respects, the existence were still problematic. Antonio de Mendoza, Viceroy of the New Spain was ordered to recognize the passage which leads to these islands. The expedition, consisting of three big ships and two smaller ones, mita sailing, from the port of Juan Gallego, 1st November 1542, All Saints Day, under the command of Ruy

Lopez de Villalobos, man of letters, licensed in law, and belonging to a family distinguished from Malaga.

More happy than Magellan and his first imitators, the new explorers did not meet, in their a voyage, which are delicious, safe laziness, abundant watering. Under the latitude of 18 ° 50 'north, they discovered two uninhabited islands to which they gave the names of Nwblada and Rocapartida, and a little further away an archipelago low islands covered with lush trees; they had hardly find a port to drop anchor. These islands were inhabited by a small number of savages who appeared very miserable and who fled to their forests as they approached Europeans; single women remained; we treated them with gentleness, and some presents were made to them; we gave the name of San Esteban or del Coral, because there is notice a large amount of coral. Later we discovered yet another ten islands that were called Islas de los Reyes and which were nicknamed the Gardens because of their beautiful greenery.

Arrived under the parallel of 9 to 10% a frightful storm dispersed the squadron and destroyed a small building navigators were not long in deeply regretting the loss; because, shortly after, they found themselves in sight of a small an island of an enchanting aspect, but which they could not approach, their ships pulling too much water; he pulled out several boats (paraos) filled with indios who were from the cross and shouted in Spanish: Buenos dias, matalotes; but, as we have just said, the expedition was obliged to go away without stopping. They then recognized another island surrounded by reefs, where they spent a month resting and cool off in a bay at 7 ° latitude north and to which they gave the name of Malaga; they had a moment thought of colonizing this island but they gave it up because they found that the climate was not healthy. The general nonetheless took possession name of the king, and he called Cesarea Carolil where the ceremony had made it.

The headwinds and currents soon compelled the squadron to go south, and she came to anchor at Sarragan or Saraugas, a small island south of Mindanao. The Spaniards there made the peace of blood with the natives, who nevertheless, a few days later, they refused food; they were to obtain weapons, which it cost them a few men. The savages were flushed out from a hill where they had been fortified, and they were taken from them, amber, oil and a little gold powder from of the trade they were doing with the island of Mindanao. Of rest, this gold was in very small quantities, because the natives used to bury what they had underground, enclosed in pieces of bamboo. The after this fight, were seized with such a fright, that they abandoned the island and took refuge in Cesárea.

However, the food that had been shipped to New Spain were decreasing rapidly, and those had found en route were not enough to replace them. As a result, the general ordered to sow maize, that the crews executed with reluctance. The harvest was abundant, but not enough to meet the needs of the expedition; meanwhile, the commander did all this that he could engage the natives to return to their island, but without being able to obtain it.

The famine was soon felt in the expedition, who was reduced to feeding on cats, dogs, rats and even lizards, snakes and other disgusting reptiles, mixed with wild fruits and roots.

In these critical circumstances, Villalobos went to Mindanao, an island on which the Portuguese had kept pretensions, and asked for help from the King, who at the instigation Portuguese, of whom he was however dissatisfied, refused; on which the Spaniards entered the river of Butuan, where they forcibly seized what they did not could get good grace.

The general was, however, obliged to send a building to stock up on a nearby island called Abuyo, whose the inhabitants seemed very peaceful and who was the first to which Villalobos gave the name of Philippines, in the honor of the Prince of Asturias, since Philip II. The provisions, which were abundant, were loaded on two boats; and already the face of business seemed to have change when, assaulted by a dreadful storm, the squadron was forced to enter a port where, attacked by a great multitude of indios who boarded ships, they were pillaged and eleven men were killed.

After this unfortunate event, the crews, already arrived at the last degree of weakness and slimming, were reduced to the ration of 4 ounces of rice a day; again, while saving their provisions to this extent, do not it remained only for a very short time.

Having set sail again to search for more hurricanes, contrary winds forced our adventurers to approach to Gilolo Island, in the village of Solanga, whose king was at war with the Portuguese; these prevented them from landing and enjoined them to go back to the islands of the sunset (the Philippines) as well as the orders of their king carried it.

However the king of Gilolo, who had not forgotten the friendly relations he had once had with the Spaniards and who could not get used to the arrogance of the Portuguese, sent a deputy to General de Villalobos to propose him an alliance against these; he offered him food and a place to build a fort. The inhabitants of Casama, delighted his affability, made him all the same offers, provided he would rid them of the Portuguese.

The Spaniards began the construction of a fort in Gilolo; Pedro Ramon, the only one left of the fleet of Loaïsa and who knew perfectly the language of the country, served as their interpreter in their dealings with the indios. Suddenly though, the Portuguese came forward with superior forces and ordered the Spaniards to return under the terms of the conventions, either in Spain or in the Phillippines.

General Ruy López Villalobos, plagued by a deep melancholy, caused both by the bad success of his expedition and his remorse for having sworn the oath he had his sovereign not to touch the Maluku, died at Amboine, and was assisted, at his last moments, by Saint François Xavier who was there at that time. His death brought the loss of the expedition, whose debris embarked on Portuguese buildings, and arrived in Spain in 1549. The religious of the order of St. Augustine, who in were part of it, went to the Portuguese colony of Goa; there they embarked for Europe, where they arrived only seven years after leaving the port of La Natividad.

Philip II had just succeeded his father; with the throne he had inherited his projects; he ordered, accordingly, the viceroy Mexico to take an active interest in the conquest and colonization of the Philippine Islands. A fifth expedition was prepared and entrusted to the command of Miguel Lopez de Legaspi, whose value and prudence

were known. The king wanted the scientist Andrea de Urdañeta, who had already sailed as captain, on the end of the unfortunate Loaïsa's expedition was employed there as a cosmographer. Since returning to Mexico, he had been wearing the habit of St. Augustine. Five religious of the same order accompanied him, charged to make the spiritual conquest of the new colony, whose political organization was handed over in other hands. We knew all the power of religion Catholic, whose ceremonies are so touching and so pompous, on the mind and heart of the still wild people; also no doubt of the immense help that devoted religious and deeply imbued with the sanctity of their mission would lend to the mighty will of a man such as Legaspi. This expectation was not deceived; it is to the missionaries who are due the great results of the conquest of the Philippines. We can not dispute that the unshakable constancy of the religious does not overcome obstacles against which the finesse and irresolution of others Men come too often to break.

For a long time Father Urdaneta had been part of monarch of his ideas of colonization, and Legaspi, man virtuous, full of experience, generous, selfless and dedicated from heart to his king, was in the confidence of the religious. So he sold his properties, and it was with the money that he withdrew that he undertook the expedition under his command, but whose general direction was entrusted to Urdaneta. Five ships of different sizes, well supplied provision of food and war ammunition, and mounted by four hundred men, both sailors and soldiers, departed the port of La Natividad * on 21 November 1564.

** The port of Natividad, located on the South Sea and on the Euttes de la New Spain, was the residence of the court of the province of Guadalajara. The ships were leaving, with the breeze, in February or at the latest in March ; by the 10th or 11th parallel of latitude, they found the trade winds which allowed them to navigate downwind. They touched the islands Barbus by 13 ° lat. north to make provisions and were, at the end of seventy days, in sight of the Ladrones Islands. They passed between two islands of Guam and Carpentaria, and then headed south for recognize the cape of Espiritu Santo, a trip that was done in ten or eleven days. If they arrived too late, the downwind or southwest wind upset them singularly. They then passed near the island of Capul, then to the islands Masbate, Burias, Marinduque, and took the coast of Cuhlaya, the Strait of Mindoro, and finally the mouth of Manila Bay and Cavity. This is the road that we still have today, and there are captains do not go without worry in these straits, despite their experience and the goodness of their instruments.*

Legaspi had been appointed governor and adelantado of all the lands he would seize; he was invested with powers the most extensive.

Arrived at sea, he opened the closed letters of the Viceroy, whose content amazed everyone and Urdafieta more than others; because he was convinced that, according to the proposals that he had made to the king, the expedition was intended for New Guinea.

We have already noticed above and we can not to repeat here the observation we made. Considering the vast means in men and money that we today uses for unimportant expeditions basically, it's hard to believe that an almost gigantic project was entrusted to four hundred men and accomplished by the pecuniary and scientific resources of a leader whose experience was confined to the conquest of Mexico and

who was guided only by the advice of Urdafleta. We do not gave them food only for the crossing by abandoning them the care of feeding later with the resources of the country, as they did indeed.

The squadron discovered, on January 9, 4565, the island called Barbados, because the inhabitants had a little beard. The road had been west quarter southwest, up to parallel 9 °; after which we headed west, looking for islands of los Reyes; we soon arrived at. Marianas, where one made water and bought food for scrap. In the exchanges that we made with the natives, we testified a great distrust because we knew they were more willing to steal than other savages, which had given, rightly, to their archipelago the name of *Larrons* islands.

Having set sail on February 3, the squadron discovered 43, the Philippine Islands; we gave to a small island near the Surigao Passage, the name of Buena Senora, which she has preserved; we sailed for a long time among the islands, of rocks and pitfalls that the indefatigable vigilance of the commander always knew how to avoid. Several pirogues came turn around ships; the general ordered that they be welcomed with kindness, but with distrust, and that if the men they wore wanted to board, they were treated with thoughtfulness and affability.

The expedition released Tandaya and Abuyo. The indios were initially scared of the appearance of these big buildings that they called praos, like theirs; soon however they decided to go aboard; they had no other clothing that a tree bark they covered their nudity; they were presented with grains of glass which they admired a lot. By the order of Legaspi, they were allowed to take away everything they wanted; we also invited them to eat, which seemed to flatter them more than any other thing.

Finally, after avoiding a thousand pitfalls and running dangers numberless, the expedition anchored on April 27, 1565, in the the bay of Cebu, where Magellan had stopped and where, after its end tragic, the Victory had gone back to Spain under the command of Sebastien del Cano.

The indios placed under observation on the shore of the sea, gathered with those who had visited the ships, made their chiefs the strangest reports on what they had seen; he were there, they said, men who threw lightning, who had a thin tail and straight behind, who ate stones and drank fire, so that the smoke came out through the nose, which was of an excessive length. This was how they explained the sword of the officers, the sword worn from behind, the sea biscuit, which one is obliged to break with a hammer, the habit of smoking tobacco and the the length of the Europeans' noses compared to the flat noses of the indios.

The friendliest relations continued to subsist with the natives, although it was difficult to be heard of them and to understand them; they brought provisions in exchange for the presents that were made to them; they attended to the feasts that were celebrated on the ground, on the occasion of the discovery *Santo Niño* (holy child), little statuette that people of Magellan's expedition had left in the island. The Spaniards built a chapel on the spot where she was deposited with great pomp and where the Cebu indios love it still today.

It soon became clear, however, how much friendship the indios was interested; as soon as we stopped making them gifts, they refused food, and the Spaniards werereduced to feeding on roots and wild fruits, plantations they had made giving them only harvests insufficient for their needs.

The general, seeing how little he could count on these people, who had already missed him many times speech, decided to send Father Urdafieta to the King of Spain, to let him know the position in which he is found, and in the meantime, to take care of himself new discoveries and other relationships; he knew that the Portuguese, not happy to have defended him the Moluccas approach, even intrigued to prevent that the Spaniards were not received at Gébu, and that it was there real cause of the difficulties they experienced. However missionaries, on the other hand, were working to tighten the bonds of friendship which already united them with the natives of the country; they multiplied the festivals of the Church. The daughter of Tupas, king of Cebu, having asked for baptism, the ceremony was done with a big pump; a crowd of indios attended this solemnity, as well as that of the planting of the cross; they imitated all they saw to the Spaniards.

Legaspi, still engaged in new research, headed to the north, where he discovered the island of Patay: it abounded in food of all kinds; he conceived the project of founding a sustainable establishment. Then, having set sail, he pushed further north, looking for a large, densely populated island whose existence had been pointed out to him by the indios; he left to Panay, as he had done to Cebu, some of the religious of the order of St. Augustine, who, according to Urdaneta's observation, were charged of the spiritual conquest of the islands that were discovered. of the indios on whose mind they had acquired promptly great influence accompanied them; already the tribes that they visited took them for sovereign judges of their differences. Left alone by Legaspi, these men if full of dedication, with only a weapon to speak and support that faith, managed to conquer all the islands Bisayas by unheard-of efforts of zeal and patience and in exposing himself to every moment to the greatest dangers.

Meanwhile, General Legaspi continued his explorations in the middle of a multitude of islands, rocks and of pitfalls, overcoming the dangers of such a difficult navigation, until finally he discovered the huge bay of the Losong island.

Juan de Salcedo, master of Carnpo and nephew of the general, was specially charged to recognize this island; it was accompanied by one hundred and twenty Spaniards and the indios could have gathered at this little troop; he traveled with delight the beautiful river Pasig and judged that he would be strong suitable to form an establishment near its mouth; he got in touch with Rajah Matanda (old rajah) and with the rajah Soliman, his nephew, who ruled the neighboring populations, who received him very warmly; but the bad faith of the indios soon burst forth.

Indeed, one day, as Rajah Soliman descended the river on a big junk, he approached the boats Spanish and attacked them unexpectedly; he was received vigorously, repelled with loss and forced to take the leak. The master of Campo went immediately, with eighty men, to a small Indian fort, located on the edge of the river, at the very place where today is the fort Santiago. A gunner directed the defense; we recognized soon he was European because he was making signs of the cross to indicate that he was Catholic and to request that the spared; but these demonstrations did not serve

him nothing. The assault was pushed so vigorously that the indios fled in haste after setting fire to ramparts that were made of wood; we found in Fort Twelve cannons and some rocks that had probably been provided by the Portuguese, but of which they did not know how to serve. Rajah Matanda did not participate in this act of perfidy, and it was even claimed that throughout the fight a white flag continued to float on his house.

In the meantime, the wind began to change, and the approach downstream, which did not allow to pursue searches, forced the expedition to withdraw into the small *Cawit** Bay; later she returned to Panay Island, where she made ample provisions.

** Caùit, in the language of the country, means hook, small handle, and this place was named because, indeed, this little bay forms a hook. It is now Cavite, a small port in Manila Bay*

On June 23, 1569, an expedition composed of three ships and who had left Cadiz brought despatches from king for the governor general; they enjoined him to take possession of the Philippines, on behalf of the crown of Castile, to colonize them and to reward people who would have distinguished themselves. Legaspi went immediately at Cebu, where he proclaimed, by public criers, that he was going to found a city, and that people who would come to live there would have to register at the notary. Fifty people were registered were distributed to them, and the city was called Ciudad del santo Number of Dios (city of the holy name of God); a municipality was created, and the government of the new city was entrusted to Guido de Labazares. The governor general returned, after that, to the island of Panay and prepared seriously to conquer the big island of Losongs (Luzon). This island was so named because it was noticed that each inhabitant had, in front of his hut, a large cylindrical mortar wooden, in which, as is still done, he was pounding, to clean it, the rice that forms the main food of this people. Now these mortars are called, in the language of the country, losongs.

The expedition against Losong left the island of Panay the 45th of April, 4570; only one religious remained with six men in the island of Masbate, to keep this conquest; others followed the expedition. General Legaspi passed his men reviewed in Lestaga Island; their total number was two hundred and eighty. He first touched the island of Mindoro, to the inhabitants of which he imposed a tribute which was named royal tribute; it consisted of an annual fee, per family, worth of 8 reals of plata. We met near this island a shampan, big Chinese building, which was in danger of perishing in the strait and that the indios had already partly looted; he was rescued and pulled out of the bad where he was. The Chinese were so grateful of this act of humanity, which they established from this moment, trade relations with the Spanish government from the Philippines.

Legaspi, having entered the large bay of Losongs, first carried on the village and the port of Caùit, located at 7 or 8 miles from the mouth of the Pasig, to wait for the rest of the expedition; the inhabitants of this village came to he and they recognized themselves subjects of the king of Spain.

The forces that Legaspi could dispose of were, as we have just seen it, very little for the big and perilous conquest he was about to undertake. His project was to land at Mainila, a village whose name seems to derive two words tagales mayron nila (there is

nila)*, and then attack the Tagalogs ", where Tagales, people many and already seasoned by the first fights he had delivered to the Spaniards and in which he had been rescued by the Portuguese. Its leader, Rajah Soliman, had besides, the time to prepare; and, as he feared the punishment due to his betrayal, he had become the declared enemy from Spain.

It seems, however, that on learning of the arrival of the general, his fury had changed into pusillanimity; no one came oppose the march of Legaspi, who, suspecting of what happened in their hearts, judged that the best way to achieve its purpose was to try once again the voice of the sweetness. He therefore proclaimed, through his interpreters, that he was come to conclude an alliance with the Tagales, that these peoples could look at the Spaniards as friends dedicated and would welcome all those who come visit it. As a result, the Rajah Matanda or Locandola ***, king of Tondo ****, came on the spot to present themselves

** The nila is a small shrub found abundantly on the shore where Legaspi founded the city of Manila that we call Manila.*
*** The name of Tagalogs comes from Taga Ylog, who, in the language of country, means inhabitants of the rivers.*
"" "The descendants of Locandola, king of Tondo, still exist in the province of Boulacan; they are confused with other indios, whom they do not differ in anything except that they are exempt from paying the tribulo.
"" The village of Tondo still bears this name.

to Legaspi, who received them as he pleased them. He told them that he had come, by the command of his king, to convert them to the religion of one God; for this purpose the king sent priests of this religion, which he committed to listen to the word with confidence, to obey them then in all that they would prescribe. He added that, if the Tagales consented to recognize the suzerainty of the King of Spain, they could be assured, under any circumstances, of and the protection of this powerful monarch; then, pretending to notice, for the first time, the absence of the rajah Soliman, he expressed his astonishment, saying that Prince had done well not to come with his uncle the Matanda and promising that he would be received as if nothing had happened. Soliman, having been warned of the good dispositions of Legaspi, hastened to arrive; he was introduced to the general by the old rajah, and all recognized themselves as vassals of the king Spain.

This was a big step towards the conquest of this beautiful country. Peace finally seemed assured, and Legaspi prepared himself, without delay, to lay the foundations of a city to which he kept the name of Manila; he ordered the Indios to rebuild the fort placed at the mouth of the river. We raised a large house in the city to serve as a palace to the governor, then another, with a church, for religious, and a hundred and fifty smaller for the Spaniards. The governor declared that this city would be the seat of the government spiritual and temporal of the Philippines.

It was May 15, the day of Santa Potencianà, from the year 1571, that solemn possession of Manila was solemnly taken; we celebrated a Mass in honor of the saint of the day, who came the patron saint of the city, and this holiday is still going on today. Tradition reports that that same day, Our Ladyof Guia appeared miraculously

in a padan. A painting that represents this apparition is preserved in the sacristy of the cathedral; this event became an opportunity great festivals which were given to the natives.

However, the reconciliation of Rajah Soliman had not been nothing less than sincere, and he neglected no means to attract the king of Tondo to his party; he succeeds, especially when Macabebe and Hagonoy indios, two villages near Manila, came from Bancousay, with forty Caracoas*, to reproach Lacandola for his had allied with the Spaniards. The general, having learned the hostile dispositions of these indios, sent them a deputation to know whether they would remain faithful or not; what their leader replied, "Let the sun be divided in two and "That I be abhorred of my wives, if ever I am the friend "Castilas **. After speaking this way, not wanting go out the door of the house, to return to his caracoa, he rushed out the window, shouting, "*I am waiting for you at Bancousay!*»

Legaspi at once sent the master of the Campo, his second, and Martin de Goyti with eighty Spaniards. One fight decided the war. The indios were completely defeated; their leader, the most valiant of all were shot with an arquebus shot, and the son of Lacandola was taken prisoner. General, after declaring to them that they

** These kinds of boats are still in use in the Bisayas.*
***This is how the indios still call the Spaniards today and all the whites in general.*

deserved death for their betrayal, did not publish less a general amnesty. On one side the loss of their chief and the other the generous conduct of the Spaniards, after victory, filled the indios with both fear and admiration. The king of Tondo understood that what he had of better to do was to submit; the surrounding population imitated him, and everyone hastened to rush for recognize the sovereignty of the King of Spain.

This was how, by a fair mixture of firmness and clemency, the governor managed to extend his domination until on the provinces of Pampanga and Pangasinan, far from the capital and whose inhabitants did not speak not the same language as the Tangals. He is worthy of note that the moderate driving of Legaspi not only won the hearts of the indios, but that she still had the most advantageous influence on the troops of the expedition, which did not engage in any of the disorders, none of the riots that manifested so often during the conquest of Peru and Chile. Moreover, the commander the expedition had received, on leaving, the express order of to resort to the severity and force of arms only in the case of absolute necessity.

The city of Manila, whose first homes had built of wood, became the prey of a fire; we rebuilt it according to plans and under the direction of the famous architect who had led the work of the Escurial. It was on this occasion that the governor formed the municipality and He made the oath of fidelity to the king by all his members; he then determined the location and boundaries of the place public, those of the government palace, the convent of St. Augustine and several other buildings; he agreed also to each citizen a suitable ground to raise his house.

Legaspi was not only a tireless navigator and a cautious general, he still displayed great skill as a director and of high political views; he felt how important is China's trade to become one day both for the metropolis and for its colonies, and he neglected

nothing to conciliate the inhabitants of this empire. He ordered the indios of Mindoro, who had seized some of the cargo of the Chinese shampan, to restore fully the values they had appropriated. The Chinese were very grateful for this well done.

Legaspi, moreover, offered to the sangleys * the franchise of the port of Manila and the right to exchange their goods against cash. Since then, the trade in China, regardless of the objects it supplies for the consumption of Manila, procura for New Spain rich cargoes, which soon gave profits immense. The governor, to strengthen and expand more and more these trading relationships, had openings made

** This word, which derives from two Chinese words, hyang and lay (merchant men) has since been used in the Philippines to designate the Chinese who have not ceased to have active trade with these islands and to have establishments there. They are, indeed, indispensable, which does not prevent them from having been very harmful to the Spanish Government, as much by their frequent revolts as by the aid they lent to the English when taking Manila; and it is to be feared that they will not find the same co-operation with them if some day they attempt a new attack on this admirable colony, of which they feed, it is said, the desire to seize it.*

to Chancher, Viceroy of Ockin, and sent him presents.

Meanwhile Juan de Salcedo took care of the conquest north of the island of Luzon, while the missionaries, delivered to their own resources and using good weapons different, seized the Bisayas, which they attached the inhabitants with a facility that was a miracle. Legaspi instructed his government for extraordinary results obtained with a handful of soldiers and a small number dedicated missionaries. At this news, admiration was at its peak in Spain: the king realized that to complete a company so big and so beautiful, it was not a large army that had to be sent to these distant regions, but rather a new body of missionaries; It was not long before we saw Manila arrive successively. other evangelical workers, both of the order of the Augustins, like the first ones, than those of Saint Francis and St. Dominic. They came, say the chronicles, to help their predecessors in the culture of this young vine of the Lord and bring him back all the fruit that we wanted to collect *.

**It is at this time that the first communication tests are traced back from India with Europe by Egypt. Dr. Antonio de Morga, Minister of the Philippines Audiencia, who described this country years after its conquest by Legaspi, expresses itself thus about the communications this island has with Spain.*
"It is customary to send letters and despatches for Spain, by India who, having passed through Arabia and the Red Sea, arrived to Alexandria and go from there, by sea, to Venice and then to Spain."

The passage through the Cape of Good Hope was then still prohibited by Portuguese.

Such were the beginnings and the progress of the conquest from the Philippines; such were the simple means used to place and maintain this beautiful country under the Spanish rule: we did not need, for that, neither of these large deployments of force or these stringent measures, too often put into use by the conquerors, and that reprobate both prudence and humanity.

What religion has done, it alone can maintain it, and it is only too sure that the Philippines would be lost for Spain and for the Catholic religion, if ever took away the religious who keep them so miraculously, without the help of a single European soldier. May, a moment so fatal never to arrive!

That was the business situation when, on August 20, 1572, died Miguel Lopez of Legaspi, with the cautious character and the wise conduct of which Spain was indebted of such a beautiful colony. In stripping the indios of political independence, he knew how to procure for them a softer one; he directed his first efforts towards the maintenance of tranquility public; he occupied himself with the propagation of Christianity; he protected the commerce, he watched over the interests of the treasury. As he added a province to the crown of Castile, it imposed on the inhabitants the real tribute; this tax, which was a real capitation, was first fixed at 8 reals of plata or a strong dollar per family, and paid in powder gold, cotton, curious fabrics, products of the small industry of the inhabitants, in rice or whatever they could to obtain, each item having been prepaid at a value determined. This tribute, which at first appears to have been only a financial measure, had, moreover, a goal political; it was to occupy in a useful way a very large population that idleness would infallibly dangerous, and to oblige, by the very means she used to manage to pay taxes, to create a commercial and manufacturing industry that was to to ensure his material well-being.

It will be seen, below, that this tribute was increased by the continued, of 2 reals, of which 1 and a half real was assigned to the interview of the camp of four hundred soldiers, that General Gomez Perez das Marinas formed in 1590, and the payment of the expenses of the war; the other half-real was devoted to worship. Indios were also subject, with some moderation, to certain chores called polos, besides which they were held, for food and a small fee, follow the Spanish in peace and in war, and to provide workers for the construction of ships and houses.

It seems that the story of this conquest, that we come to trace, could offer an example that would be good to to imitate in the new colonies of France, and especially in the Marquesas Islands; the results could only be be advantageous, both for the development of colonization than for the extension of the city's trade. The indios are everywhere the same; in the climates they inhabit, they only have to bend down to satisfy all their needs, and as long as their activity is not stimulated by a external constraint, they remain incapable of any progress.

CHAPTER III.
STATE OF THE COUNTRY BEFORE THE DISCOVERY.

Description of the population. - Negritos. - Indios. - Tagales. - Bisayas.-Their origin.- Weapons.-Trade.-Curious jars.- Costumes. - Cleanliness. - Time measurement. - Government. - Social state. - Justice. - Weddings. - State of women. - Contracts. – Licentious morals. - Circumcision. - Religion. - Superstition. – Humanity from the Spanish Government. - Prepayment conversion. - Food. - Agriculture. - Various cultures. - Boats. - Other weapons. - Houses.

We will now make known the state in which the Spaniards found the Philippines, at the time when they made the discovery and the conquest. This knowledge is essential to be able to judge what we will have to say then about their current situation. Many

things have experienced little or no change; as well will we find in the chapter that will deal with the present state of these peoples, several details that will have already been read in this one, these rehearsals were inevitable.

The Philippines islands, placed under the torrid zone, enjoy the most delicious climate, the most fertile terroir of the world. The ardor of the sun, tempered by the fragrant breezes morning and evening, and by the abundant dew of nights, absorbs the vapors that fall in large waves rain for part of the year; the other party offers a long spring which is, in May, in its greatest shine. Trees, as in the rest of the torrid zone, there keep their greenery all year long.

The peoples of the Philippines were moving away, in truth, from those of Europe by their features and by the color of their skin; but we must be careful not to believe the stories of historians of time who paint them as species of satyres, men with long stature, having nothing in common with the inhabitants of our hemisphere. Who could believe that he there are still people in Manila who support very seriously, on the island of Mindanao, whole races of tailed individuals?

The first navigators who approached in the Philippines first noticed two distinct races of men: the first was the negritos (little blacks), nomadic race, which was called in the country aetas [itas); the other were the indios of Malaysian origin, but who were called nevertheless Indian because of the many reports they offer with those of the East and West Indies. More later, among them, there were mixed-race blends with the Chinese, the Japanese, and the islanders from the South Sea, brought by the winds.

The negritos were smaller, more slender and less black as the Negroes of the coast of Africa; less loaded with fat, they had the finer physiognomy: their hair was frizzy like those of the Negroes. They were first found in an island near Cebu Island, which was this is the name of Negro Island. They wandered naked in the mountains, having for all clothing only a piece of tree bark with which they covered the natural parts. Their weapons were a big bow and a quiver of bamboo filled with arrows. They lived from roots and the product of their hunting, that is to say the flesh of buffaloes, deer, wild boars, and the birds they peeled and roasted at the place where they had killed them, and to whom they had joined some roots or some fruits; after which they fell asleep on a tree or at his foot, in the middle of ashes the fire they had lit to prepare their meal. These negritos have remained so far in the wild where they were then and from which nothing could withdraw them.

The race we have just described was, in our opinion, the primitive inhabitants of this archipelago where it is found all over; if it differs, as we have noticed, Negroes in Africa, this is no doubt due to the fact that even as the skin of the whites turns brown and their features widen and deform when exposed for a long time to the insults of the air and the heat of the sun, likewise also the countenance of the Negroes is regularized when, instead to wander in the burning sands of Africa, they can live sheltered in the shade of bushy forests where the sun does not penetrate never. In the state of domesticity where the negrito is found in Manila, it seems to change, for the color and the character, in the third generation, and then get closer to the Indian. From this reasoning, we would be almost tempted to look at the indios of the Philippines as not being themselves negritos mixed with Malay blood and among whom we also sometimes find some traces of the character Malabar.

These indios, much less black than the Negritos and also less wild, huts were built; as, moreover, they approached by their flat noses and in general by body habit, we thought it would not not impossible that they descend directly without that it was necessary, for that, to admit the mixture of the Malays. The differences would be explained by a civilization more advanced dating back several centuries, and by their way of life that exposed them much less to the influence sun, rain, wind and sudden changes of the atmosphere.

These unmixed indios were of an ordinary size, but rather small than large; their complexion was colored coppered; they had big black eyes, hair smooth, little or no beard; they were well made, intelligent, imitators, valiant, sober and determined. Rest, those we are talking about are the Tagales, who inhabited the island Losongs and which differ from those of Bisayas and races whom we have called mestizos.

We have reasoned much about the origin of the races of men of color found in these islands. There are authors who supposed they had come from South America, where we meet them that look exactly like them and from where they were brought, in their canoes, by the trade winds that had pushed them from island to island. We see, indeed, still today, quite often, inhabitants of Polynesia worn by the winds on the east coast and south-east of Luzon Island. Similarly typhoons and storms sometimes bring in Japanese people; lately again a shipwreck has thrown eight on the coast of Mindanao. Other observers, comparing the customs, customs, language and food, think all these secondary breeds descend from the Malays; and we are not far to share this opinion, that is, for the inhabitants of Bisayas.

In any case, it is beyond doubt that the aboriginals of this archipelago had, long before the arrival of the Europeans, frequent relations with the nations of Asia, and in particular the northern provinces with the Chinese and the Japanese, with which they physically offered great points of resemblance; it was found, in fact, during the discovery of the Many items from the factories of China and Japan, such as fabrics and utensils of different species. These provinces also had relations with Arabs, which is seen so much by the points of the Tagalog writing that by the custom of circumcision we found even at wild negritos. As for the southern provinces, the analogy of their inhabitants with the Malays and the Bornees was striking; it was mainly by religion that they differed. However, the Borneans already preached beliefs in the Philippines and there were proselytes, when the Spaniards arrived and put an end to their projects. However, it is likely that the first Europeans who visited this archipelago were the Portuguese, although heard after the release of Magellan to Cebu and his meeting with their squadron. It is probably at this time that, to hinder the establishment of the Spaniards in these islands they sent help and advice to Locandola. We have noted above that in the small fort of Manila, we found the pierriers served by a European gunner in whom it was thought a Portuguese.

The ordinary weapons of these peoples were the sword and the launches, but it does not appear that they ignore everything the use of firearms; it is supposed that the scree Fort had been melted by a native, and, what is certain, it was an industrialist, named Pandapira, of the neighboring province of Pampanga, which melted the artillery which was used for the defense of the city of Manila.

The Philippine trade with Japan, China, Kingdom of Siam, Borneo and the Malays had already taken some extension before the Spaniards arrived in the country. The inhabitants exchanged with the Chinese products of their country against goods from Canton, from Chincheo and Ucheo. Japanese people came from Nangasaki, with the north winds blowing at the end of October, bringing silks, cotton and household utensils; they returned, as well as the Chinese, to the time of the winds downstream, with campoe wood, honey, powder gold, bamboo, wax, palm wood and others merchandise. The Philippines also saw merchants of the Moluccas, Malay Peninsula, Siam and Camboge; however this trade was then strong little importance, but Governor Legaspi gave him later a very strong impulse by the advantageous ratios that he establishes with the Chinese and by the exclusive privileges that the government granted for the importation of all these objects from New Spain. The monopoly of this trade was granted to the inhabitants of the new colony: suspended a moment during the war of independence of Spanish colonies of America, it is gradually back to flourishing. Manila is unquestionably destined to become one day the center of trade of the two Pacific oceans and Indian, and to compete, not only with Sincapour, but still with Batavia, today the most commercial place of the Asian world.

Among the items we imported, there were some that to women of the country occupations which, therefore, developed their taste for industrial work; because, regardless of household care, which were all their charge, they were still engaged in which they were very skillful, imitating, with a high fidelity, some of the models they procured from China.

There is one fact above all that serves to prove the relations of trade that the Tagales had maintained for a long time with the continent of Asia; it is that at the arrival of the Spaniards at home, they found old earthen jars brown loaded with unknown characters that was impossible explain. The natives themselves did not know where they held them, and although they had nothing remarkable, the Japanese attached great value and bought them at exorbitant prices, to enclose their cha or tea, which was very well preserved there; they watched them as one of the most beautiful ornaments of their houses. Some of these vases were gilded on the outside, and these were the more expensive; they were kept in bags of brocade, and paid them up to 2,000 taels of 11 reals of plata (about 16,000 francs), though they were cracked. At the time of the conquest, there were only a few samples left did not keep.

The costume of these peoples that we are going now describe will bring out even more reports that they could to have with other nations. We have already noticed that in the Philippines there was, independently of the Negroes, two races that differed essentially between they, the Tagales and the Bisayas; the same difference was found in their way of fighting.

The tagalogs or Tagales wore a kind of doublet of a coarse cotton cloth called canga, double sleeves, short, descending only until the belt, collarless and closed from the front. This doublet was red for the chiefs, white or black for the people; kidneys were surrounded by a kind of colored loincloth that was hanging between the legs up to half of the thigh and that they called bahagué (pronounced as bajaque, in Spanish); they had bare legs and surrounded their heads, the height of the temples, a handkerchief called potong. Regardless weapons we talked about above they also used bows and arrows, knives, long daggers and blowguns by which they launched poisoned arrows.

The tips of their spears were iron or bamboo half burned and hardened with fire. Their weapons defensive were shields of carved and inlaid wood of tortoiseshell and mother-of-pearl, and cuirasses of bamboo and string from the country that was hardened.

This costume was not the same in all of Luzon. Thus, in the so-called los Zambales section, men are shaved the front of the head like the Japanese, and left the rest of their hair falling back from behind, as among the Chinese; but they did not braid them like these, limiting themselves to raising them to the top of the head.

Tagale women put on a dress with sleeves of the same fabric and color as men, whether they called baro, a word that is still used today in speaking of a shirt; this garment was shorter than that of men: they still wore a cotton loincloth tied to the waist and down to the feet; finally a colored belt brought out grace and flexibility of their size.

The women of the chiefs had crimson silk robes, sometimes plain, sometimes gold stitched, with fringes and other ornaments; they wore, around the neck, chains of perfect work, called calombijes; There were big and small; some, which were adorned cornalines, agates and other blue or white stones, passed to have a considerable value. Their earrings were golden and remarkable by the finesse of work, and massive rings, in which were encased with precious stones, adorned their fingers; their hair, which was very thick and of an ebony black, were lifted gracefully on the back of the head; their legs were surrounded, from top to bottom, with cords were threaded stones of the same kind and intertwined other black cords, forming like a kind of cothurnus.

Men and women were extraordinarily clean; they bathed every day, they washed their heads, after the bath, with a decoction of a tree bark called gogo, which made the water foam like soap. Women used various cosmetics; they perfumed their long and beautiful hair of fresh oils of ajonjoli, sesame or coconut, made odorous by musk or by the white flower called sampaguita; they treated many of their teeth, even flatten them flat and their then gave a black color which, once applied, lasted as long as they did. This operation still had the advantage to preserve the teeth until the most extreme old age; but we must admit that the effect it produced was nothing attractive for a European. They chewed continuously betel, which gave their lips a color very bright red.

The costume of the Bisayas differed, as we have said, from that of the Tagales. Men and women wore their hair long behind: men sometimes supported them, like the Malays, by a handkerchief often embroidered with gold, folded in the shape of a turban, but more commonly by the same bark of trees they made their bahagué; they were painting each other the body of different colors but left their faces in the natural state; their ears were adorned with large rings gold and ivory; their clothing consisted of a vest without a collar, and over a frock coat of a cotton fabric or silk of color that went down to mid-leg; they wore neither shirt nor trousers, but a bahagué making several turns and that we only saw when they left the rest of their clothes; some of them Wore only the bahagué only. In a word, their costume was similar to that of the Malays, which they had also the character and the occupations; like them, they were sinners and pirates.

Bisayas women who did not paint their bodies like men, had grace in maintaining and

approach. Their dress was, in general, very simple; a loincloth encircled their waist and went down only up to half of the knees. Some of them were more research in their setting; these were their black, long hair in mats around their heads; their loincloth went down to the feet, and over them wore a cotton or silk dress of different colors. Both sexes were discovering breast and feet nus; rings, chains, gold curls adorned with colored stones completed their toilet.

Women were much more laborious than men; they were responsible for all household care, which they understood perfectly. Their husbands were nothing less than jealous, and worried mostly very little of the conduct that their wives had held before the wedding. As for these, they did not pride themselves scrupulous fidelity.

Their reciprocal politeness was extreme: a person never went to another without using a compliment who answered the words: "With your permission; " she was at the same time a deep reverence, looking up the right foot, bending the left knee and elevating the hands even in front of the face.

These peoples could not calculate to what extent the day or night was advanced only by the rooster's singing, the height of the sun and the laying of the hen; they counted the months by the moons, the years and the seasons by the harvests, by the appearance of leaves and by the maturity of fruits.

The Philippine archipelago offered, even before the arrival of Spaniards, a strong division, both in terms of than the way in which the inhabitants governed, as well as by their physiognomy, their habits, their costume and their language. These divisions were those of northern or Losongs, inhabitants of the island of Luzon, and that of the southern or Bisayas (painted men), because that indeed they used to paint all the body ; it was rare that they had relationships with the Losongs.

The differences we have just pointed out do not allow us to not to offer the reader a uniform table of the habits of these indios; we think we should prevent it in advance that the one we are going to present him relates rather to the Losongs than to the Bisayas.

There were no kings properly so called; but, in each village, there were more powerful characters, more influential than the others, and who stood out either by their birth or by their personal qualities. These chiefs were, in general, rather friendly with each other; but sometimes so they made war on each other; they bore the title of rajah, and this title was hereditary; they were required to watch to the well-being of their subordinates and to help them in their needs ; these, in turn, had to respect their Rajah, to follow him to the war, to serve him on sea, in work fields, fishing, in the construction of his House; there were, in addition, a number of chiefs supreme or principal to which all their subjects were to obey on pain of being enslaved and sometimes die. We still see today an example of power of these chiefs in that exerted by the sultans of Solou; they still perceived on the harvests a tribute called baniz. All the descendants of these chiefs were looked upon as noble and free from chores and other services to which were subject to commoners who were called *timaguas**. Women were noble like men.

On arrival of the Spaniards, a chef named Gat-Pulnitang reigned in the countryside of Bulaquin, as far as Masalocot, and from the Labasin River to Pangsayaan, which is Batangas today: he was still at war with his neighbors and made himself famous by his value. The Chief Gat-Sungayan ruled the country from Masopa up Galanum; he was a great hunter of deer and wild boar. Another part of the country obeyed Gat-Salacab, while that Sampaloc was for master old Gat-Paguil; these four chiefs were of a mixed race called dailiagang, from the negritas women's union with men from Borneo.

It sometimes happened that, to get rid of this dependence, a few inhabitants, feeling stronger than the others, under their orders a number of families they called barangay, having immediately underneath them are datons and other little heads; there was therefore, among the inhabitants of the Philippines, four classes of distinct people: the supreme leaders called rajahs or sultans and to whom the Spaniards gave the name of reysuelos or little kings; the lower heads and the nobles, then the commoners or timaguas and finally, the slaves we are going to talk about.

These slaves, in their turn, formed various classes; there is first of all the sanguijuileres, which were loaded exclusively the interior service of houses; others lived at home and took care of outside work, such as sowing, harvests, navigation; they helped with construction houses and ships; in a word, they were responsible for all kinds of chores and without drawing any salary for their work; they were called hamamahayes. Moreover, if there among them who were completely slaves, he was also found that were only half, third, quarter, which formed among them many distinctions, according to that their father and mother were of the same degree of slavery or of a different degree; they were then subject to fractions of chores, which counted by moon or half Moon ; for the rest of the time they were free and could serve whatever they wanted.

It was never known positively what had been the origin of this slavery nor how part of the population had to acquire such absolute authority over another party; he are some people who think that slaves were the true primitive inhabitants of the archipelago and that the masters were Malays who had conquered the country at a very remote time. This point has never been clarified, although the mixture of races that the Spaniards found there seems to give some weight to this opinion; moreover, slavery was abolished upon the arrival of the Spaniards.

Slaves were objects of commerce, and the price in was set by experts: sanguijuileres were selling usually 10 taels of gold or about 80 piastres (420 francs); the others half, when they were first choice.

Justice, as with all half-civilized peoples, was rendered by the old men, who did not follow other rules in their judgments that use and what their reason their dictated; these old men enjoyed the greatest influence, they heard the witnesses; and their judgments were without appeal. As we have just said, there were no laws written, and the custom varied from one locality to another. For recognize the guilt of an accused, various superstitious tests: sometimes we dipped into a river all those who were suspected of the crime, and the first whose head appeared above the water was convicted, because it was supposed that his guilty conscience had taken off his breath; many people get drowned not to get out of the water first; sometimes we gave

each of them a lighted candle in his hand, and the the first that was extinguished was also that of the culprit; sometimes they were ranged around a candle and the one to whom the flame was headed was condemned. The next test was less unreasonable because it was based at least on some knowledge of the human heart; we threw a stone in a pot of boiling water, and the culprit was he who refused to plunge his hand into it.

The various classes did not marry each other, and the Nobility, above all, was anxious not to mingle; we could not to have only one legitimate woman, but as many deconcubines that we wanted; the first was entitled to the title A'xjnaraba, legitimate mother, housewife. Their children were the only heirs of their father; if she did not have one, he could leave his property to whoever he wanted. All these women lived in common.

The marriage consisted of a simple arrangement between the two families, the alleged one having first been employed in the house of the father of his pretended; he alone gave the dowry, and he had no right to his wife until after the death of the parents of it. Young people to marry were called bagontaos and the girls dalagas. The alleged had two different dots to give: the first, the bigay suso, was counted parents, it was the price of the milk of the mother of the bride; the second was the bigay caya; she remained the property of the household; but it was only too often that it was dissipated in advance in wedding expenses, festivities and adornments. The services rendered by the alleged in the house of his future could be considered as a third dowry, and this one was often entirely lost for him; because, if it does not suit the parents of Dalaga, they chose another who began to serve them to his tower. This use was not without danger for the virtue of young person, but that was a point at which fathers did not care; they often speculated on the expulsion of a bagontao to take another one that made them presents and worked for them. The marriage once concluded, the woman became, so to speak, a slave; it was on her that weighed the whole burden of the household; she worked a lot more than her husband and still felt happy when she was not abused.

The nuptial ceremony consisted in the sacrifice of a pork, which was made outdoors and protected from foliage thick; it was an old woman who was killing him, doing all kinds of grimaces and pulling from what she saw omens favorable to the future happiness of the bride and groom; she was finishing to bless them; after which other old women their were feeding throughout the day, indulging to a crowd of indecent demonstrations. However, three days before the wedding, under the pretext of taking care of the preparations the parents and friends of the newlyweds had started a real orgy that lasted three days after the ceremony; during these feasts, the license was brought at its height; they were perpetual libations of liquors fermented, intermingled with the most obscene dances; after that we went to bed pell-mell. Each person invited to the wedding party had to offer a present to the bride.

Arriving at her home, the homework that the young wife had to fill in were so painful, the work of. the house so tiring, that she was often forced to part with her husband. The elders of the village then intervened in the quarrel, and, if they recognized that the wrongs were on the side husband, they allowed the woman to keep the dowry, which in this case took the name of vigadicaja; sometimes both Husband shared it amicably.

Unlikely on the article of fidelity, adultery was punishable only by a fine, the amount of which was fixed by a judgment without appeal; the husband, sufficiently avenged by this condemnation, took up his wife and lived again with her as before.

Contracts and wills were done verbally, but before witnesses, and frequently gave rise to serious discussions; the loans were made at a usurious interest, and when one could not pay one's debt, one would pay becoming, either himself or his son, a slave to his creditor.

These peoples did not know the numeraire; we gave goods for clothes, herds or poultry for cultivated land, slaves for houses. Sometimes we offered, in payment, objects that we needed, powder or gold shot, or metal musical instruments, such as tam-tams or gongues, to which they attached a very great price; they were playing in their parties and in the war as a drums.

Theft was punished sometimes by slavery, sometimes by death, and insults to the nobility were severely repressed.

They used, to weigh the objects, of divided Romanes in decimal parts, as well as among the Chinese, and, as they did not know the numbers, they were marking divisions by means of small stones.

The license of manners was extreme; rape, accompanied the most hideous circumstances, always remained unpunished, especially when it was committed by a noble on a timagua. The dissolution was pushed to a certain degree, that it was not uncommon that a young husband would have had, shortly before his marriage, intimate relationships with her mother-in-law or her beauty and, if his wife was not yet nubile, he continued them even after the ceremony. We tell details appalling on the excesses to which libertinage led them and the customs that had been introduced them in this respect. We would think to defile our pen if we sought to give even a slight idea of it; these Abominable customs have ceded to the power of religion.

Circumcision was adopted among these peoples, and with this particularity that it was the children who were made reciprocally this operation.

Husbands were very reluctant to find in their wives this flower so precious to the peoples of Europe; they even looked at themselves as very happy when a suitor older than they had saved them a sentence or expenditure; we say an expense because there were men who professed to defeat the dalagas and that we paid for it; unless, however, an old woman had not done to the girl, during her childhood, a an operation which consisted in breaking the membrane of the hymen.

These peoples had no definite religion, and they were delivered to the most puerile superstitions; of old witches or diviners exploited their credulity and enjoyed of the greatest credit on their minds. Their worship confined to venerating monstrous idols of which they were afraid and to whom they presented offerings of flowers and fruits. They loved, besides, the whole nature, and especially objects whose appearance struck them with respect or of recognition. In a nutshell, their religion had great relations with the fetishism of the negroes of the western coasts of Africa.

However, Father Juan de la Concepción ensures that amid their idolatry and their absurd beliefs they admitted a god superior to others and who lived alone in the sky; the Bisayas called him Labon, which wants say ancient, and the Tagalas Botata-Meycabal, which means the god creator of everything; but that did not prevent them from render honors to the sun, to the moon, to a star of a extraordinary shape, at a rock, at a rock, that is to say to everything they thought could harm them; effect of the excess of their pusillanimity. They had a respect all particular for some yellow bird called cariman and who lived in the mountains; they made him pretty much the same honors as the Egyptians at their ibis. Finally they celebrated also holidays returning from certain astronomical phenomena. All in all, said this father, their religion was a mixture of fetishism and sabeism or adoration of the body heavenly, like those of the inhabitants of Peru and the ancient peoples of Arabia.

It is necessary, moreover, to remark, about what we have just to say, that these peoples had no public worship, no priests, and that each one celebrated his devotions, that we called anitos, in the interior of his house and the he thought fit. Only in some special occasions, they were celebrating a party called pandot, which lasted for four days and for which they met in the house of one of their characters the most distinguished. The house was enlarged by a species cradle of foliage, adorned with flowers, fragrant herbs and small lanterns. The party ended, this cradle, that it was not destroyed, received the name of simba or of simbahan, which means place of worship or sacrifice, and that name is the one that, in the language of the country, is given today to Christian churches. There was however some old women called catalonia who were doing the witches, in the name of the people, prayed to the idols and claimed to learn from them the remedies he had to be applied to the diseases of those who came to consult. It is said that these women used to to the idols of human sacrifices.

The dead were buried, without any pomp, under their houses; after a while their bones were unearthed the skulls, which were made to honors; this use has been preserved until today. After the burial, we spent a few minutes crying the dead ; after which there was a meal in which we did not never failed to get drunk and that was renewed during several days ; that's what was called celebrating the tibao. These meetings were especially necessary on the third day who was following the death; because it was believed that, on that day, the deceased came to visit the survivors. They put on this occasion a vase with water in front of the door of the house, so that the dead washed their feet and got rid of the land of sepulcher. They kept a lighted candle throughout the day; they were spreading out at the door a mat covered with ashes, so that the footprints remain marked; finally, at the table, which was served with the greatest magnificence, the place of honor remained empty for the deceased. These people believed in another life where the good and the valiant were rewarded and the bad guys punished.

They were firmly convinced of the truth of a great number of apparitions stories, and believed in the existence some fabulous beings. It was under big trees that the catalonia or babaylanas offered sacrifices to demons, to the souls of their ancestors or nonos who lived, according to they, sometimes these trees, sometimes isolated rocks. They were not never in the vicinity of these trees or rocks, without bowing respectfully and asking for forgiveness not to have troubled his rest. If anyone of them was sick,

his friends would introduce to nono foods which were later to serve the patient and who acquired thereby medicinal virtues.

Other times the patient was transported in a box built expressly in the place designated by catalona; we brought a victim to be sacrificed in public. The old woman ordered to the prettiest dalaga of the assembly of hold the animal in a certain way, so that his blood can to spread on the patient. That done, the catalona was starting to make a thousand contortions; the foam came out of his mouth, and, after consulting the victim's bowels, she predicted the outcome that the disease would have.

The slightest circumstances became omens almost always annoying. The song of tic-tic, the appearance of a snake in a house, the cry of a rat or a small lizard made melancholy and gloomy on the spot. He do not talk about fishing in a fisherman's house, or hunting in that of a hunter. The people who were on sea should not name the land, and those who traveled on the ground had to avoid talking about water. They had the greatest confidence in the inductions they drew of all these facts, and, as it always happens, they would not let themselves detract from the frequent cases where the omen did not come true.

They feared, above all else, the tigbalang: it was a a kind of apparition or ghost that took turns the shape of an old man, a horse, a monkey or a horrible monster who persecuted them and of whom they became the slaves; they also called this monster divita; his house was in the darkest forests and that was where they were appeared. In the dark retreat where he was hiding, he delivered to the criminal frills he was weaving to harm the humans. One day an epidemic disease was rife in one of the most beautiful provinces of Bisayas, the divita hovered invisible in the air, but his voice was distinctly hear; she called by name the inhabitants that the epidemic had to reach; they did not delay, after that, in to fall sick, and their death was infallible.

Pontianac was a bad genius that prevented women in child labor to give birth; it is to ward him off that still today, when a woman starts to feel pain, her husband cleans the front of the door of his house and light it at a bonfire, after which he place on the ground floor, naked, a saber in his hand it splits the air, striking and thrusting to prevent the demon to approach before his wife is delivered.

They had great faith in the virtue of certain herbs to inspire love to those who touched them : they told a lot of stories girls girls who consumed themselves with love for insensitive young people, but who, when they managed to touch these grasses the object of their flame, were born in his heart a tender return and covered reason after having wife.

The simplicity and credulity of these peoples are barely credible; their whole life was, so to speak, only a long childhood: also, when he stood among them some people of a slightly more developed intelligence, they knew how to skillfully exploit for their benefit the weaknesses of their compatriots; they persuaded them that they had to their orders a subtle spirit like fire, that they were sending wherever they wanted and that was destroying everything which displeased them. More than once, it is said, they employed an active poison to kill their enemies and to convince others of their irresistible power.

It was not possible for religion to uproot completely all these superstitious beliefs; so are there any many that have survived to this day. The indios of Manila still maintain that the savages of Paragua or Palawan chew a root whose only smell immediately kills the one on whom it is blown; other roots, they say, igniting the mouths of people who are there introduce and bring out devouring fire. We have appreciated these absurdities at their fair value in our book on the archipelago of Solou, in the article Tawi-tawi.

It has sometimes been reproached to the religious sent in Philippine Islands to have simulated appearances and made believe that they, too, possessed a magical power, in order to it would be easier to reach the goal they were proposing, that is to say, to conversion and humanization, if it is permissible to express oneself thus, of these barbarous peoples. On this subject, we will first note that this charge is not proven, and, in any case, leaving to theologians the care of decide to what extent such means are in conformity to the spirit of the Catholic religion, we must not, it seems, to judge them only by their results, which have been happier: as to the prudent conduct of missionaries, on which we will have to come back more than once, the conquest and conversion of the Philippines were accomplished almost without bloodshed and only by gentleness and persuasion.

There is, in this respect, an important observation to do is that the King of Spain was made accountable regularly how the indios were treated; he expressly recommended to the Viceroy of Peru, by hands of who were passing the dispatches for the Philippines and who was in charge of the shipments for these islands, to ensure that that only religion should be used to subject these peoples, and that, without changing anything, in the beginnings, their habits and their way of life, we arrived at goal by degrees and without jerks; you had to tie them by all means and possible sacrifices; keep and imitate, as far as possible, their government natural and traditional, and bring them out only insensitive degrees.

By giving his agents similar instructions, the Spanish government was probably before the eyes of the painful memory of the cruelties that had accompanied the conquest of America; he felt that on simple minds and naive hearts brutal force has less power than the sweetness and prestige of religion, especially of religion catholic, whose ceremonies are so full of pomp and of majesty. How could savages have resisted the appearance of these rich clothes, long and beautiful processions, of these flowers sown on the steps of priests, of these clouds of smoke coming out of the censers, of this music and these songs so serious and so simple, while at the end offices, fraternal meals gathered at once priests and neophytes! All this is still seen today at Manila and forms one of the great means of which the government uses to preserve the affection of the people of this archipelago: it is certain that there is no safer way to to subdue the spirit of the savages. The French government would well, it seems to us, to try this way to the islands Marquesas. We do not doubt that he could easily reach to dominate, by the lure of religion and without the employment of material strength, his new colony he would maintain thus at very little cost. Besides a similar conduct would still have for him the advantage of tearing off the intolerant mind and speculator of Anglican missionaries the populations neighboring islands, which would therefore become France dedicated friends and loyal subjects.

Rice was the main food of the natives; the women were responsible for cleaning it, pounding it in the mortars called losongs, of which we have spoken above. This rice, punctured in water, on fire, replaced for them the bread; they ate, moreover, fish whose sea and all the rivers abound, of some herbs and roots cooked in water and seasoned with salt and juice tamarind, sweet potatoes, guavas, oranges and coconut; they loved honey and the juice of the sugar cane. Hunting provided them with deer, wild boar and buffalo, which they called carabao; they gathered several to pursue these animals that they
killed with arrows or spears, and they shared then the flesh they let dry in the sun for make some tapa.

It was with the sap of the coconut tree and that of several others palm trees that they made their wine or tuba; they distilled this sow in a kind of coarse alembic in their own way, at by which they obtained a very strong alcoholic liquor and a high transparency; they drank after their meals and, in addition, used them as a remedy very effective in certain local affections. This snorkel, agreeable to taste when it was fresh, quickly became bitter; it was from this liquor that they drank to excess in their parties, family reunions, weddings and funerals.

Agriculture was in a state of absolute childhood: processes consisted in destroying, by fire, the bad grasses of the land that one wanted to sow; then, when came the rainy season, to make earthen holes using of a piece of palm tree cut to a point and throw a few grains of rice, which made a hundredfold, both the earth was fertile. We planted a year on one side and one year on the other, but never more than two years in the same ground. This method of sowing is still in use at certain tribes, as well as in the hilly countries where he there is no water in reserve. It is the cultivated rice of this the name of mountain rice, that the Spaniards call secano, because it comes in lands dry; it is more nourishing, tastier and more sweet as the rice of the plains that grows in the water; it also makes more to cooking, and it is, therefore, more expensive and more esteemed. In the Philippines there were still sweet potatoes and roots of all kinds.

Among the fruit trees that these natives knew, it is necessary to count first banana, which requires almost in one culture and of which they possessed ten to twelve varieties: they picked the bananas before they ripened, and ate them grilled with their rice cooked in water. In truth, each tree does not gives fruit only once, but offspring that rise from its root come new trees that do not not delay in giving, in their turn, abundant products; also a banana plantation multiplies with so much it quickly becomes a thick forest in a short time.

The tree from which the natives derived the most utility was without a doubt, the coconut tree; alone it could be almost enough to all their needs: its trunk, its leaves, its fruit, everything had his use; they built their houses, wove them their clothes, drew pleasant drinks, drugs, liquor, vinegar; they fed on the inner substance of the nut and in extracted oil to burn: milky and refreshing water that it contains is diuretic and slightly laxative; its outer shell, beaten and softened, serves to make rope and refit boats. This substance is much better than filasse, for it never corrupts; finally the shell of the nut was shaped into utensils of different kinds.

The other fruits that these people knew were the santor, lemabolo, pineapple, oranges of all kinds, big and small, sweet and sour, grapefruit, tamarind and a host of others. The mountains were covered some of the most precious woods and there were, among others, large trees of greatest utility, such as lumber: only one trunk was enough to make a boat called caracoas, lapis, tagagnes. These only fired very little water; the indios used it both at sea and on the rivers, and all knew how to govern them. Their crew consisted of one hundred rowers and thirty fighters. of the boats of this kind, called paraos, mounted by Illianos, had the audacity, not long ago, to enter Manila Bay and attempt a coup de hand on Cavite, but they were repulsed by the flotilla colonial Philippines.

In addition to the weapons we talked about, the fighters wore at their waist a sort of pointed dagger, one foot long and four fingers wide; the handle was inlaid with gold and ivory and resembled that of shouting Malay; they still had a two-edged sword in a sheath made of wood or buffalo leather and that they handled with so much skill, that if they could reach their enemy and seize it with one hand by the hair, they him cut, with one hand on the other hand, the head they carried in their box, to keep it as a trophy and a mark of nobility. Among these weapons, some were called campilans and others baracaoas; these were made with iron pulled from their own mines and which is as beautiful as the iron of Bizkaia. There were some considerable deposits in Pampanga, where there was also gold sands they washed to exchange with the Chinese.

This beautiful country, watered by great rivers and many rivers, which contains considerable lakes, where thermal and mineral springs, ferruginous and sulfurous, whose coasts have very safe ports, bays, bays and excellent anchorages, in a word this real land of promise was inhabited by a large population, easy to drive, intelligent, and who was divided into men from the banks of the rivers and men of Inland for the rest, there was little difference between each other.

The houses of the indios were all built on large trunks of trees, of a wood that did not become corrupted by humidity, and which were arranged to the mourning piles, that neither earthquakes nor hurricanes, so common to certain times of the year could not shake. of the sleepers carried from one trunk to another and helped to make the buildings stronger; the houses were narrower at the top than at the bottom, and the roof was formed by bamboo tied together by rattans and all covered with palm leaves (nipa). The ground floor, whose height was 5 and a half feet and often open, was not inhabited; that was where they were their provisions and their domestic animals, which were in goats, pigs and buffaloes; they put their rice there, their wood, their canoe and their nets. A bamboo ladder, who got up at night, drove to the first floor, the the only one whose house was composed and which formed only one only room, with a terrace still called today a batalan. The dwellings of chiefs, though better built and stronger, did not differ from the rest in nothing else. During the wet season, the rains were sometimes so abundant that the whole country was flooded, and then the inhabitants could not communicate between them with the help of their little pirogues, which gave in the country a very particular aspect. It was then mostly that we felt the great advantage of the mode of construction generally adopted which protected both against moisture, against earthquakes and hurricanes: this way of building is still the only one in use today.

CHAPTER IV.

HISTORY OF THE PHILIPPINE ISLANDS, SINCE THE DEATH OF LEGASPI UNTIL TODAY.

Guido de Labezares.-Li-Ma-Hong Expedition ..- Chinese Admiral Ho-Mol-Cong comes to Manila and brings back two missionaries with him. - Sirela, King of Borneo, implores the help of the Spaniards.-Disputes between officials and missionaries. - Japanese Corsair. – Arrival of the first Dominicans. - Conspiracy-of the Chinese. - Blockade of Manila by the Dutch.- Construction of the fort of Samboanga. - Trembling - Cong-Sing, Chinese pirate. - Don Sabiniano Manrique de Lara. - Don Diego of Salcedo. - Conversion of the Mariana Islands. - Cardinal de Tournon. - Don Fernando Bustamante. - His tragic end. - Headed from Manila by the English. - His catch. - Remarkable conduct of Don Simon of Anda y Salazar.-Evacuation of Manila by the enemy

Don Miguel Lopez deLegaspi was succeeded in the Guido de Labezares government: this was from the beginning of his administration that took place against Manila the expedition of Li-Ma-Hong, the famous Chinese pirate; he had started being a brigand leader and his band was raised little by little to two thousand men. Pursued by government troops, he took refuge in a seaport, where he seized all the boats he found there and changed his job as a thief for that of corsair. Having attacked and defeated another Chinese pirate, he found himself as a result of this success, at the head of a flotilla of eighty fifteen small buildings, with which he desolated the seas, destroyed the trade and committed the greatest Cruelties..The Emperor of China having sent against him a fleet of one hundred and thirty ships assembled from forty thousand sailors, he fled to the small island of Tacootican: there, having knowledge of the establishment that the Spaniards had formed in Luzon Island and the weakness of their defense, as a means of defense, he resolved to seize Manila; he instructed his lieutenant Sioco to stand before the new city, where there were barely sixty Spaniards, with four hundred elite men. Their project was to go down on shore during the night, to surprise the sleeping Spaniards and to pass them all over the sword; luckily a strong north wind prevented them from approaching the coast, and they could not make their debarment until eight o'clock morning, November 30, 1574. The governor defended himself vigorously, and Sioço resolved to re-embark to engage Li-Ma-Hong to come in person renew the attack; this one had wet at Cavite and only returned two days later on the side of Manila: this delay saved the Spaniards, who worked day and night to put themselves in condition and placed four good pieces on the ramparts while in the meantime Juan de Salcedo, who was at Vigan, hastened to come to the aid of the capital. At the approach of the enemies, all the inhabitants shut themselves up in the fortress; Li-Ma-Hong entered without difficulty in the city, which he reduced to ashes; but when he wanted attacking the fort, he felt a resistance to which he was far from expecting. All his efforts remained useless; he it was impossible for him to seize it; he re-embarked, after experiencing a loss of two hundred men, and went to make a descent on the banks of the Pangasinan River, where he built a fort with a double row of palisades and began to levitate tributes on the natives of the country.

When we learned in Manila the resolution he had taken, the governor sent Juan de Salcedo against him with two one hundred and fifty Spaniards and two thousand five hundred natives. This skilful captain surprised the Chinese and burned their entire

flotilla; he won another victory against they on earth and forced their first entrenchments. The night having come, Li-Ma-Hong took the opportunity to strengthen in the inner chamber, and Salcedo, reflecting that he could seize it by force without sacrificing enough large number of men, resolved to form the blockade of the fort and to reduce the enemies by the famine, means all the more sure, having no more boats, any retreat their became impossible. Although this plan was very wise, the success did not answer; the Chinese were doing, during the night outings, and thus obtained wood with which they built boats, frail indeed, on which, three months after Salcedo's arrival, they arrived to get to Tacaootican Island.

In the meantime, the Imperial admiral, Ho-Mol-Cong, arrived in Manila, where he was very well received, and at his departure he took with him the two religious brother Martin de Harrada and brother Jerome Martin, who were the first Christian missionaries who visited China.

In the year 1577, Sirela, king of Borneo, came to implore the help of the governor of Manila against his brother who had usurped his throne, offering, if it was replaced, to recognize the suzerainty of the King of Spain. The governor, Don Francisco de la Sande, granted him his request and managed to hunt the usurper, after which he sent an expedition against the islands of Mindanao and Iolo, which she seized; but neither Spanish troops and religious were not enough many to be able to enjoy properly of these benefits.

Disputes arose at that time between the officials Spanish and the missionaries: the first claimed that after such great dangers and such hard work, they should be allowed to think of their personal fortune; but they could have achieved it only by vexing and pressing the indios: also the missionaries, led by the only desire to expand Christianity, and looking, with reason, the greed of the Spaniards as the biggest obstacle their progress, they opposed it strongly, and they went so far as to refuse absolution to recalcitrant employees. These, on the other hand, impeded the zeal of the religious, and the sound of these unhappy dissensions being arrived at the ears of the King of Spain, this monarch made a royal ordinance in favor of the natives of the country.

A Japanese corsair landed in 1581 on the coast of Cagayan, from where it could only be dislodged with considerable loss because his men fought with a courage of Lion.

The discussions between the officials and the clergy continued, and they came to the point that the Augustan provincial embarked for Mexico, from where he wrote to the king to beg him to allow all the religious of his order to return to New Spain, since they was impossible to remain quiet witnesses to the extortions that, notwithstanding the Royal Order, the officials made the indios suffer. The sorrow that these quarrels caused Governor Don Gonzalo Ronquillo led him prematurely to the tomb, and his death became the occasion of a terrible disaster. During the ceremony funeral, one of the candles that surrounded the catafalque set fire to the church, which was reduced to ashes, as well as than a large part of the city.

In 1587, arrived in Manila the first religious of the order of St. Dominic, and a few years after the governor don Louis Perez Dasmarinas. Having left for a expedition that

he had received the order to undertake against the Maluku, he was treacherously murdered by the Chinese he had taken with him. This tragic event happened at the tip of Santiago; he had ruled the colony during only three years, and in this short space of time there is had made the most important constructions and founded several useful institutions.

It was around this time that one of the bloodiest catastrophes whose annals of this archipelago have preserved the memory: at the beginning of the seventeenth century, he there were already a large number of Chinese settled in the island of Luzon, and most seemed willing to embrace religion Christian. In the month of May 1605, we saw Manila three mandarins, coming, as they said, from the from the Emperor of China to recognize if it was true, as it was reported, that the small island of Cavite was solid gold. This pretext seemed so ridiculous, that one does not doubted not that their true purpose had been to form intelligences in the country, to assist a vast expedition that China was preparing against the colony. The governor accompanied them to Cavite, and after having them convinced that what they had been told had no basis, he urged them to leave.

We were working on the fortifications of Manila; a Chinese man, named Eng-Câng, offered the governor his services and those of his compatriots to help with the work; we do not did not accept, and, knowing the enmity of the Japanese for the Chinese, they thought they could use them to watch them; they did not, however, respond to the trust that one had placed in them. The Chinese had to rise the day before St. Francis and slaughter all the Spaniards; but the plot was unveiled by a Filipina woman who lived with a Chinese man. Nevertheless the conspirators had gathered at a half a league from Manila, and had erected entrenchments there. Eng-Cang was sent to deal with them, and it was discovered while he was himself at the head of the conspiracy, this who put the government in the need to take other measures. A detachment of 130 Spaniards, commissioned by the brave Louis Dasmarinas, was cut to pieces by the rebels, who came to lay siege to the capital: but this was the end of their success; they failed in an assault they delivered to the city, and the inhabitants, who had risen en masse, encouraged by this first advantage, made an exit. Repulsed on all sides, the Chinese withdrew messy; keenly pursued, they were completely defeated. It was calculated that this revolt cost the lives to twenty-three thousand of these foreigners; the little that survived was sent to the galleys; Eng-Cang was hanged. Of all the Chinese who were on the island, there were only two a thousand who took no part in this uprising.

In 1609, the Dutch came to block the port of Manila, but they were forced to lift the blockade after lost three of the five buildings that consisted of their Wing. The result of this expedition was an attempt by governor of Silva against Java and, moreover, an alliance with the Portuguese Viceroy against the Dutch, who lost a naval battle on April 14, 1617.

It was in 1655 that the fort of Samboanga was built, in order to put an end to the incursions of the Moors, and at the same time, several rich people arrived in Manila Japanese converts to Christianity, fleeing persecution at which their fellow believers were in their country.

The colony was visited, in the year 1645, by a terrible scourge, that is to say, by a terrible earthquake. The only city of Manila counted more than six hundred buried victims under the ruins of their houses and, of all the monuments public, only the convent and the church of the Augustinians and that of the Jesuits.

Cong-Sing was a famous Chinese pirate, son of an adventurer who had been a porter in Manila, who later inhabited Japan, and, having passed into China, rose, by degrees, to the rank of general of first class, occupied important places and ends up being beheaded: his son, the pirate, had inherited from the stirring and bold character of his father; he managed to to have, under his orders, a fleet of more than a thousand buildings mounted by one hundred thousand men. The first important expedition he undertook was directed against the island of Formosa, occupied by the Dutch, who maintained a garrison of two thousand men. These, having supported a ten-month siege, were forced to accept a capitulation which assured them the free retreat at Batavia.

As soon as Cong-Sing saw himself master of Formosa, he sent a person in Manila to enjoin the captain general to pay him homage as his vassal and to recognize him as king of the archipelago; otherwise he would come to take possession of it by force and punish him for his disobedience. The governor unites at once with from him, all the Spaniards who were in the Philippines than in the Moluccas, which they had occupied time, and took several other precautions against the attack he foresaw; but Providence rendered superfluous. The pirate died, and his son, being not a bellicose character, was content with sovereignty from the island of Formosa; he sent an embassy to Manila to to conclude the peace.

Don Sabiniano Manrique de Lara, who ruled at this colony era, was a man of high piety, at He returned to Spain and embraced the monastic life. His successor, Don Diego de Salcedo, from Belgium, was very different from him in this respect as under many others. Haughty and despot, he was throughout his administration, in perpetual discussion with the authorities of the colony, both ecclesiastical and civil. It was under his government that the Jesuits undertook to convert the inhabitants of the Larrons Islands, where they established an education house that Queen Marianne had an annual income of 3,000 piastres. It was in memory of this very royal liberality as the name of these islands was changed to that of Mariana Islands.

The mission of Cardinal Tournon in China to accommodate the unfortunate affair of Chinese ceremonies, so fatal to the Christian religion in this empire, did not seem at first sight, it is not necessary to influence the tranquility of the Philippine Islands. But this legate, who at that time was still only patriarch of Antioch, having landed passing through Manila, behaved with so much height, showed so little respect for the first authorities of the island, while demanding the highest respect for its obsequious, that he indisposed against him everyone and that his sojourn became the occasion of terrible and serious dissensions; it could be judged, therefore, that his mission would not obtain not the success we hoped for: it does not belong to us to judge his conduct; the story pronounced.

Great zeal for the service of the king his master was expensive to Governor Don Fernando Bustamante, who arrived at Philippines in 1717; he recognized many abuses in details of the administration and wanted to stop them; he took measures to

bring treasure considerable sums owed to him by several inhabitants. These acts of vigor indisposed the spirits against he, and he had the imprudence to further foment discontent by a conduct perhaps too violent, but that made excusable the purity of his conscience and his selflessness foolproof. A plot was organized in the shadows; but he would probably have aborted if Bustamante had not incurred the wrath of the clergy in seeking to violate the asylum of the cathedral to draw a criminal who had taken refuge there. The insurrection broke out in the morning of October 19, 1719. The armed people entered the governor's palace, which he was murdered there with his eldest son; his other six children were sent, later, to America. On receipt of these awful news, the king sent the Marquis of Torre Campo, with order to crack down on the guilty; but the opposition he met with the execution of the orders of the government mit so much obstacles in the course of justice, that, together with the removal Beyond the metropolis, the revolt remained unpunished. The Archbishop alone, though he was, without question, one of the least guilty, was punished by his translation to a seat in America.

In 1740, the English admiral Anson, who had raised his flag on the ship the Centurion of 64 guns, attacked by from the cape of Santo-Espiritu the galleon of Acapulco, the Cabadonga. Despite the disproportion of forces, the Spaniards defended themselves so well that they did not surrender until after to prove to the English a loss of sixty men killed and seventy wounded, among whom were the two commanders first and second.

In 1762, the city of Manila had reached the highest no prosperity; its commercial relations were more extensive; she traded with the Moluccas, Borneo, parts of India, the Straits of Malacca, Siam, the Cochinchina, China, Japan, in a word with almost all the countries between the Isthmus of Suez and the Strait of Behring. Catholic missionaries had since widespread in the islands of the South Sea located between America southern Philippines. We will point out here, by the way, that we do not know what became of these first zealous propagators of the Christian faith; they were apparently victims of their dedication; but what is certain is that the Catholic religion had already done many times around the world and poured its benefits on the Mahometan populations, Buddhists and idolaters India, long before the missionaries of the other Christian communions were thinking of imitating his example, putting in their works as much ostentation that Catholic monks had shown modesty and of simplicity.

Such was the prosperous situation of the Philippine Islands and the city of Manila in particular when towards the end of this same year, the English, then at war with Spain, Presented in front of the port with considerable forces, seized the city and delivered it to plunder. We believe that our readers will read with interest some details about the circumstances that accompanied this unfortunate event; we have drawn from authentic sources but we will abbreviate them as much as we are possible.

We will first point out that at the moment of the appearance of the English, the Government of the Philippines, which was then provisionally in the hands of Don Manuel Antonio Roxo, Archbishop of Manila, had not yet received no notice of the declaration of war, and had not, by therefore, could not make any defense preparations; the first news was given to him by the enemy fleet. The garrison of the square consisted of the king's regiment, which should have been full of two thousand

men but whose twenty companies had never formed together more than fifteen hundred men, who even, at this moment, either by mortality and desertion, or by detachments that this regiment had provided for different services, were so diminished that there was no real in the square, that five hundred and fifty-six soldiers and eighty gunners, all indios and who got along badly enough to use the artillery. Upon arrival the enemy, we hastened to form four militia companies of sixty men each, who were named Trade troops.

On September 22nd, 1762, the English fleet composed of
thirteen ships and ascended by six thousand eight hundred and thirty men of good troops, came unexpectedly in front of the city of Manila. In the first moment and in ignorance where we were political affairs, we took these ships for a fleet of Chinese shampans; we did not neglect yet not to take some defensive precautions, and an officer was sent with a letter to the commander of the squadron to ask him what nation he was from and for what motive he had come, without announcing in advance his arrival. This deputation returned the next morning, accompanied of two English officers carrying a summons written in ordinary terms, and announcing that the fleet had come to conquer the islands; the answer was that we would defend ourselves.

On the night of 23-24, the enemies carried out their landing near the Redoubt named Saint-Antoine-Abbi; an unsuccessful attempt to repel them was made, and the In the morning, the place started firing of effect: the besiegers were covered by churches behind which they had posted and in which they were to retrench. It was to try to disturb them in these works that we decided to do, the following night, a vigorous exit: it was commanded by Mr. Faller, French officer in the service of Spain, who behaved himself with the greatest bravery. Although it was not long to convince himself that the enemy's forces were too superior to his so that he could hope to dislodge them, he did not let him fight all night, not returning to the place until nine o'clock in the morning; there is was then suspended in hostilities because the besiegers sent a parliamentarian to the city.

On the evening of the 25th, the bombardment recommenced, and the place retaliated with a few cannon shots loaded with grape shot, who killed several men whose bodies were devoured by hungry dogs.

In the morning of the 28th General English asked the head, taken by the indios, of an officer of his nation, who had been sent two days ago as a parliamentarian, demanding, moreover, that they be delivered the author of this attack, threatening horrible reprisals if we refused. The besieged satisfy this demand, and the archbishop, which, as we said, performed the functions Commander, mounted on horseback and showed himself to the enemy camp.

On the 29th, the English squadron was reinforced with three other big ones armed buildings, bringing the total to sixteen vessels.

There were, in the English army, about three hundred and fifty French conscripted to Pondicherry: these, who only sought the opportunity to turn against them, sent two men of trust and good will, who presented themselves unarmed at the gate of the city, with the intention of coming to terms with her on the best way to turn towards the Spaniards; instead of opening them the door, taking them for Englishmen and fearing

some mischief, they were allowed to be slaughtered by the indios. Waiting, the English got wind of what was going on, and they took their precautions to prevent any betrayal of the from the French.

October 3rd, considerable detachments of indios Pampangos having entered the place, it was decided to attempt an exit: it took place and was very bloody, but did not bring no benefit to the defense. The next day, the breach being made at the bastion of the Fundicion, a council was held of war where all the soldiers were of the opinion that capitulate; but trade deputies, those of the city and different religious orders decided for the continuation of the defense: unfortunately the archbishop yielded to their influence, and this resolution was the cause of all the misfortunes that Manila felt.

On October 5, at six o'clock in the morning, the besiegers went out of their posts, walking on three columns, and gave the assault on the breach, which was barely passable and where the forty Frenchmen of Pondicherry went up first, and met no opposition. The fort having been obliged to surrender, the city was plundered, which lasted forty hours, and in which one spared neither the churches, nor the archbishop's palace, nor part of the palace. The loss of Spaniards, during the siege, were three officers, two NCOs, fifty soldiers of the line and thirty militiamen of the trade killed, not counting the wounded, plus three hundred indios killed and four hundred wounded. The besiegers lost More than a thousand men, including sixteen officers. The batteries and the ships launched into the city over five thousand bombs and more than twenty thousand balls.

It seemed that after a forty-hour looting and the capitulation granted to the garrison of the fort, the enemy could have let the city breathe, but it was not. The next day of taking Manila and during the looting, the commander English made tell the archbishop that his troops were under the weapons and that he was going to pass all the inhabitants over the sword, if it were not counted on him immediately two million dollars in cash and another two million in drafts on the treasure of Spain; we were forced to consent, and we devoted to this contribution, among other things, all the funds magical works and all the silverware of the churches.

The English kept Manila for fifteen months, without being able to make any progress in the provinces; they evacuated after the conclusion of peace.

When it was convinced that the city would not delay to surrender, he was given the rank of lieutenant of the Governor at the Oidor Don Simon de Anda y Salazar, so that he could get out of Manila and establish the seat of government in some other part of the island. As a result, eve of the surrender of the square, at ten o'clock in the evening he embarked in a lancha, with some rowers, a servant tagale, 500 piastres in cash and forty sheets of stamped paper, and went up the Bulacan River, to undertake the defense of the islands against an enemy powerful, master of the sea, who had just seized the capital, while he himself had neither army nor navy, neither weapons, and that he was besides more than sexagenarian: he arrived in Bulacan the next morning and gathered on-the-spot the province's alkalde, religious and other Spanish; he showed them his titles, which were recognized with enthusiasm. The news of the Manila surrender was arrival in the evening; Anda published a proclamation by which he declared himself governor and captain general of the islands Philippines; he establishes the seat of his government in Bacolor Pampanga.

We would be driven too far if we wanted to describe in detail the sustained war for fifteen months, with a prudence equal to his courage, by the brave Anda, notwithstanding the difficulties which stood in the way of his undertakings, many of which must be counted insurrections fomented by the English and which had mainly place among the Chinese, although the spirit of insubordination spread more or less in all the provinces. The English even pushed the disloyalty up to promise 5,000 piastres to anyone who would deliver Anda living between their hands. The arrival of two galleons who had happily escaped to the English he was a great help and he allowed to raise a considerable army.

Meanwhile, July 5, 1763 arrived in Manila an English frigate, bringing the news of the armistice concluded between the belligerent powers and the order to suspend the hostilities in all parts of the world. In March following, we learned the final signature of peace, accordingly from which the British evacuated Manila and the Spaniards returned in full possession of all the Philippines.

We will end here the actual history of the colony of the Philippines: what has happened there since will find in part place in different chapters of this book and in particular in that of commerce; the rest would be irrelevant for the reader. We will limit ourselves to pointing out that these islands have felt the backlash of the unrest that has ruled in the metropolis since the first invasion of French, and that they were, consequently, the theater of several conspiracies and insurrections.

CHAPTER V.
GEOGRAPHY.

General geography.

Situation of the archipelago. - Number of islands. - Division. - Provinces. - Inhabitants. - Population. - Cities. - Rivers. - Lakes. - Mountains. - Volcanoes. - Earthquake. - Water eruption from the volcano Mayon. - Disappearance of a mountain.

The Philippine Islands form an archipelago composed of very large number of islands of all sizes and which forms part from that division of Oceania to which oh gave the name from Malaysia. These islands were named in honor of King of Spain, Philip II, who, at the time of their discovery, by the illustrious Magellan, that is to say in 1521, was not still as Prince of Asturias; they are located between parallels of 5 ° 32 'and 19 ° 58' north latitude and the 114 ° 56 'and 123 ° 43' east longitude of the meridian of Paris. The space they occupy is about 550 leagues from north to south and 251 leagues from east to west. They are bathed to the north and northwest by the China Sea, south-west by those of Solou and China, and to the east by the Pacific ocean.

The number of these islands is considerable; but among them there are about forty who are much more important that the rest; the others are so small that they do not deserve not even to be named; the main ones are heading from North to south. That of Luzon, which is the largest of all about 115 leagues long and 57 wide; a part of its territory, to the northeast, is still independent. After Luzon come, going south, the island of Mindoro, the groups of Calamianes, Paragua or Palawan only a small part of which belongs to the Spaniards, Samar, Panay, Leyte, Cebu, Negros Island, Bohol and

finally Mindanao, the largest after Luzon. Most of them of these islands, there are still wild tribes that are not not subject to the Spaniards. It would be easy to divide the entire archipelago into two parts, know: Luzon, which would consist of the island of Luzon alone, and the Bisaye, which would enclose all the others, that the natives call Bisayas, an indigenous word that means painted men, because at the arrival of the Spaniards, the peoples who inhabited them painted the body of different colors.

The Philippines as a whole forms thirty-three provinces, including the territory called New Province, which did not no alcalde yet; their names are, in general, or those of the islands themselves or of the natives who inhabit them. The only island in Luzon comprises nineteen of these provinces, are known: Tondo, Bulacan, -Bataan, Zambales, Pampanga, Pangasinan, Ilocos-south, Northern Ilocos, New Province, Cagayan, New Biscay, New Ecija, Cavity, Laguna, Batangas, Tayabas, Camarines-Norte, Camarines-Sur, Albay. Iloylo Island, with some neighboring islands, forms three provinces, to know: Ancient, of which the island of Cagayan belongs; Iloylo and Capis, which still contain the islands called Remblon, Sibuyan, Banton, Tablas and Maestre de Campo. The island of Mindanao is divided into three provinces: those of Samboanga, Misamis and Caraga. The province of Cebu consists of the island of that name with those of Bohol, Davis, Siguijol, Bantayan and Camotes. The islands of Mindoro, Samar, Leyte, Negros and Calamianes are each a province to which they give their names respectively; the latter includes also a small part of the island of Paragua. The archipelagos of Batanes and Marianas also form each a province.

The Philippines is inhabited by a population of various origins: they are first of all the little negroes of the mountains, who are said to be descendants of the Negroes of Angola, but who are, in our opinion, the primitive inhabitants of these islands and who still live in the wild; then the negritos or oetas (itas), Malay and copper-colored indios. Besides that, we there are also descendants of Chinese and Japanese, wrecked on these coasts; fishermen from the islands of the South, which were carried there by the monsoons; finally races formed by the mixture of all these different peoples. It is very difficult to estimate the total population of the Philippines, especially since it is absolutely impossible to count individuals who live in the independence. As for the others, the only means we use to arrive at a more or less accurate appreciation is the tributo. Each family consists of husband, wife and children, having reached a certain age, royalty to the royal treasury, and this tax is called the tribute. The number of families who are subject to it and we multiply this number by a number which is supposed to represent that of the individuals whose family is composed; but various reasons make this calculation very uncertain. First, we do not agree on the actual number by which it is necessary to multiply the number of families: some, such that T. Comyn want it to be six and a half; others do not only five, and they seem to be approaching most of the truth. Then it should be noted that the lists are made by village priests and passed on by them to the alkalde of the province; but they are, in general, very faulty, because taxpayers are looking for all the means possible to avoid the payment of this tax, to the extent to leave their homes to take refuge in the mountains, where they become what are called lift or montescos; there are also many people who are free from the law, like old men, children below age and people in place. Anyway, a census done in 4810 brought to 386,654 the number of families paying tribute; what, multiplied by six and a half, gave 2,515,496 individuals, regardless of who is exempted, according to what we have just said; what to add more than 7,000 Chinese, 4,000 Europeans, *mestizos* and son of Spaniards, and finally the wild

population of the mountains, whose number is unknown, but which is very numerous. In 1833, the tribute multiplies this time by 5 gave a total of 5,545,190 souls, and this figure remained about the same in 1859 and 1840, during the last official censuses; We found then 688 pueblos or communes who gave 656,551 tributos and 5,103,445 inhabitants , which makes an increase of 83,448 in the number of tributos since the year 1826.

The causes we have indicated above to explain the lack of accuracy that must necessarily exist in the calculation of the population are not the only ones; he gets there still enclose the immense extent of the provinces between the southern tip of Mindanao and the Batane Islands, located north of the archipelago, the great difficulty of communications, the irregular way in which the population is distributed in places where it is often impossible to penetrate, the variety of dialects it uses, the uncertainty which reigns as to the limits of the various provinces; it all comes together to prevent one from getting a exact enumeration of the population. Here, moreover, an approximate summary of this population but that we look at as being a sixth too weak.

Indépendants.....	Negritos ou itas	25,000	1,025,000
	Igorrotes.....	1,000,000	
Sujets espagnols...	Indiens.....	3,700,000	3,975,000
	Métis chinois.....	240,000	
	Métis espagnols.....	20,000	
	Chinois.....	10,000	
	Fils du pays.....	3,500	
	Espagnols d'Europe..	1,500	
			5,000,000

As for the white population of the Philippines, it consists of from 10 to 15,000 individuals, most of whom live in province ofTondo, where the city of Manila is located; we divided formerly whites in five classes, today these categories still exist, but the ranks are merged, and it must be confessed, to the praise of the Spaniards, that if we except the Chinese, who are rather yellow than white and who remain separated from others, all whites are equal between them, and that there is distinction only for color races: in Manila, provided that one behaves with honesty and discretion, any European can spawn with the highest placed; in this respect there is no freer country in the world.

Manila, capital of the Philippines, pretty little town, the residence of the captain general, is located at 14 ° 36 'from north latitude and 118 ° 37 '50 "east longitude of Paris.

We will devote a particular chapter to its description and its history; that's why we will not give any detail here.

The most important cities and towns of the Philippines, after Manila, are Cavite and Zamboanga, strongholds; Tambobong, in the province of Tondo; Malolos, in that of

Bulacan; Bigan, in that of Ilocos; Biñan, in that of Laguna. Taal, in the province of this name, has 31,650 inhabitants, and Laoag, in that of Ilocos-North, has 35,065.

The island of Luzon is watered by several large rivers, navigable for buildings of a rather considerable port; this is especially the Pasig, a wide and deep river that comes out seven branches of Bay Lake; he carries ships from 4 to 500 barrels which are stopped only by the bridge. It's here that is the port of the coasters; here too, near the square of San Gabriel, the largest ships, slaughtered in hulls, are repaired at little cost; the river is deeper that everywhere else, and, if it were not the Manila Bridge, the buildings could go back much higher; the less considerable would go as far as Malacafian, and perhaps even if the river was better maintained, up to the bar de Pateros or Pasig, where they would definitely be arrested, the little depth of water on this bar does not not allowing to go up to the lake. The entrance is decorated with bamboo plumes and the banks covered with villages to which the navigation of the lake, if it could have place, give an activity and ensure an incalculable prosperity.

It is by this river that provisions of all kinds arrive at Manila from the eastern provinces of Luzon; thousands of canoes, jolts, paraos come and go incessantly between the lake and the city or the bay of Manila, from which he is only a few hours distant.

The Aparri River has two springs, one in the province from Nueva-Ecija and the other from Nueva-Biscaya; she crosses the entire province of Cagayan, and flows into the sea north of Luzon, after a course of 60 leagues; she wears buildings that go back to Lallo, where they charge oxen and tobacco, which are the main objects of commerce from this province.

The other remarkable rivers of the island are the Abra, the Agno, the Pampanga through which Manila Bay can communicate with the sea north of Luzon, having crossed the island from one end to the other; the Cabusao, which takes birth in Lake Buhi and crosses that of Bato in the province of Camarines.

The island of Mindanao is watered by the magnificent river of Butuan, flowing from south to north and after crossing Lake Linao flows into Butuan Bay; during his course, which is about 60 leagues, it fertilizes delicious valleys. It is at the mouth of this river that, during the day of the year 1521, the illustrious Magellan, the model of navigators, after having dismounted his crew, made him hear the first Mass that was celebrated in the Philippines, and by which he thanked the Supreme Being of have brought them to the port. Mindanao or Selangan, other considerable river of the island of that name, would require a description detailed hydrographic, that space does not allow us not to consecrate him.

Regardless of the rivers we have mentioned, there are in this archipelago there are still a large number some feed the most important rivers and whose others throw themselves into remarkable lakes by their extent and their depth: their course is usually fast, they are lined with beautiful villages; their banks are adorned with bunches of bamboos and crops of the richest vegetation; they irrigate fertile fields or cross forests whose trees provide the most valuable woods. All these rivers are rich in fish, and their fishing, attached to the morisqueta (cooked rice), enough for the usual food of the natives of the country.

The most desirable lakes in the Philippines are first of all the Laguna de Bay, which has 56 leagues of circumference and in the middle of which one can no longer see the earth on the horizon. In this lake is the island of Talin, which is almost as big St. Helena: several large rivers of the province of Laguna threw themselves into it. Lake Bonbon or Taal, in the province of Batangas, is smaller than the previous; but the views he offers are not less delicious. In the middle of this lake is an island that contains a volcano from which nothing escapes but smoke. Lake Bonbon communicates with the sea by a river who feeds exquisite fish.

In, the province of Pangasinan, one finds the lake of Canarem, and in the island of Mindor Oj that of Gagayan; the big and beautiful lake of Malanao or Lano is in the island of Mindanao, as well as that of Sapongan: those of Bato, Buhi, Colatun, etc., are less considerable; finally there are still many, both large and small, in the independent from this same island of Mindanao.

Large mountain ranges cross all these oceanic islands, and run in particular from north to south in the island of Luzon. In the number we distinguish the Sierra Madré and the mountain range of the Caravallos mountains, which are first parallel during the space of 50 leagues, then meet at Caravallo de Baler, in the province from Nueva-Ecija, and together they will end up at the height the port of Lampon, in the same province; during their separation in the center of the island, the space they leave between they form the province of Cagayan and that of Nueva-Biscaya, both inhabited by many peoples wild. We will limit ourselves to mention the mountains less of San Isidro, Camarines, Albay, Mindoro, from Panay and Negros Island.

As in all major chains, some of these mountains surge proud peaks well above others. These are the peaks of Balugao, de las Tetas Iloqueñas near Bigan, Yba, Masingloc, Subie, Caravallo South and Caravallo de Baler; the Simunan of Arayat, extinct volcano that had stopped throwing flames, long time before the time of conquest; the Mariveles mountains; the colossal Majayjay, from the province of Laguna, the highest of all; the Bacacay, las Tetas de Palahtuna, the Colisio, the Ioaco.

In the Bisayas, the mountains rise to a minus high height; the most important are the Carian, in Negros Island, higher than Albay; it serves as a point of recognition to mariners; and the Tipasi, who received this name of the inhabitants, because it has the shape of a grain of rice.

The many volcanoes that we see now only the craters announce, at every step, that this beautiful country has once been the scene of great underground revolutions, and that the irregularly cut edges of countless islands that make up this archipelago are the result of their awful upheavals. The Taal, located in the middle of Lake this name is the most remarkable of these volcanoes. We find still, in the south of the island of Luzon, Bonotano, Bacacay, Labo, Colaot, in the province of Camarines Norte, Isaro, Buji, Masaraga, Camarines Sur, Albay, whose eruptions have so often destroyed inhabitants of the rich surrounding territory, and the Bulusan, still today constantly inflamed, serve as lighthouse to sailors who double the southern tip from the island of Luçon. Those of others are less remarkable, except for those in the game southern Mindanao Island, still in power barbarous nations; these, it is said, have sometimes launched ashes that were carried by the winds up China. Pharmacist Lopez from Manila told us have visited the crater of Taal volcano; it forms, according to what he

told us, a somewhat elongated circle of over 2 miles in diameter, and it's perpendicular height from 200 toises on the north side and from 150 to 160 toises on the lower sides. At the bottom of the crater there is a lake which bathes the southern wall and occupies approximately half of its surface. On the other side we find a huge amount of pure sulfur, plus a block of porphyry whose sides are from 20 to 25 feet. The walls of the crater are filled with innumerable holes, from which hydrogen gas which ignites in contact with the oxygen of the atmosphere, forming so many little sparks. The water of the lake is nothing but weakened sulfuric acid holding in solution of mercury; submitted to the still, 42 pounds of this water provided 2 to 2 1/2 pounds of sulphate mercury deutoxide.

The city of Manila has suffered a lot, earthquakes, which are felt veryfrequently. In 1645, the city was almost entirely destroyed; he perished many people. That of 1699 was hardly less fatal, and since that time we have hardly never ceased to feel more or less violent. The Spaniards distinguish two species: they call terremoto the one whose jolts are vertical; when they are horizontal, it's a temblor. We often felt these latter; but when they arrived at night, they did not were not always awake, and we learned the next day from our neighbors what had happened while we slept. We recognizes the direction of the movement, even better than by the sensation, watching oscillate the suspended crystal globes on the ceiling. When the jolts are prolonged during for some time, everyone is threatened, we go down on the squares, 'where one knelt while addressing to the Heaven of fervent prayers. It is quite common to feel, during this phenomenon, weakness in the legs and nausea as in seasickness; some people smell even real urges to vomit. As for us, the light ones the vertigo we have experienced has never been so far. M. le Gentile speaks of an earthquake at the following which almost all the inhabitants of the city were taken a violent headache that only gave way to the rest of the night.

The Mayon volcano, which is located a short distance from the pueblo of Albay, in the province of that name, offered, in the year 1760, an extraordinary phenomenon. On October 25, at the the day began to blow from the west; at eight o'clock fresh and continued with the same force until four o'clock in the afternoon, accompanied by a little rain. He then appeared in the upper part of the atmosphere an east wind, during that, in the lower part, the wind always blew from the west with the same force until seven o'clock .; he redoubled then passing west-northwest, point where he took so much of violence that he seemed to want to destroy and overthrow; it looked like the village was going to be swept away: this hurricane lasted until three o'clock in the morning, when wind suddenly jumped south with such violence that he ruined all the hitherto shaken squares ; at the same time the rain had considerably decreases.

At two o'clock in the morning, the volcano began to vomit water in such a large quantity that it can not be idea that by reporting some of the damage she did. From the village of Tibog to that of Albay, rivers were formed of 30 vares (the vare equal 0m, 914) of width, which flowed to the sea with considerable abundance and impetuosity. From the Bacacay pueblo to that of Malinao, the width of rivers passed 80 vares. In other places, the terrain was so changed that we could not recognize the paths. The village of Malinao was completely destroyed; the campaigns and the fields were covered with heaps of sand. After having wreaked havoc in Cagsava again, Camalig, Guinobatam, Liga and Bolangui, the torrent reached the pueblo of Albay, dragging with him fifty boxes built at the foot of the volcano; those who could resist were half

buried in the sand, and that was the salvation of their inhabitants, because all those who left their homes died ; at Albay there were eighteen dead bodies and thirty Malinao. The stream ran for about 2 leagues.

What was especially remarkable in this phenomenon, it could not be caused by the rain; she was not enough abundant for that. So there is every appearance that this water came out of the very heart of the volcano.

It is reported that at a very remote time a mountain all disappeared in the province of Taal, leaving no only a lagoon in the place she had occupied; He remained yet in the middle a volcanic island that threw for a long time flames; it's the crater from which we come from speak: the waters of the lake remained so hot that no fish could not live there.

CHAPTER VI.
CLIMATE.

Seasons. - Storms. - Monsoons. - Weather observations at Manila. - Diseases and their treatment.

As we saw in the previous chapter, the islands that make up this archipelago are, so to speak, that a confused mass of mountains separated by plains, whose main chain, from which various branches stand out, runs from north to south; it follows that in the Philippines as well as in the peninsula of India, the seasons have a different appearance, depending on whether one is placed in the or at sunset these cordillaries. We do not have need to add that being located under the torrid zone, the the only distinction between the seasons is that of rain and that of of drought.

In the western part, rains have prevailed since beginning of June until about the middle of September; meanwhile, the sky is beautiful in the part of east and north. In the month of October, the west wind or downstream, which has blown until then, makes way for the north wind and bring with it those same rains that then stop in the opposite party; they are so stubborn that they are prolonged sometimes for fifteen days without stopping. When it happens, the grounds are everywhere flooded, the roads become impassable, the campaigns are no more than vast lakes, whose eyes scarcely perceive the edges. It is to this a circumstance that must be attributed to the great fertility in these islands, where one can always, by a small displacement, transport from moisture to drought, and from dryness to moisture.

The heats are quite strong; but the perpetual humidity from the ground, joined to the breezes of land and sea that are being felt alternatively, makes them less sensitive to the economy than would not be tempted to believe it; during the duration of the winds of north, there is even a certain degree of freshness forces to cover more: it is useless to notice that the cold is pretty bright in the mountains.

The highest heat starts in mid-March, when the breezes of the east and south-east are declared, breezes that last about two months; they are replaced, after that, by the downstream winds; but this transition gives rise to a great struggle, resulting in storms and accompanied storms a rise in temperature.

Frequent displacements to which we have been forced and the inferior quality of the instruments that we could get us did not allow us to put the suite and the accuracy we would have liked in our observations weather; but as our compatriot, Mr. le Gentil, from the Royal Academy of Sciences, who had been sent, about the middle of the last century, by the government, in the Indian ocean, to observe the passage of Venus by the disk of the sun, made very good ones in Manila, we thought it necessary to draw from his work what could to miss on this point in ours; we are not yet not quite agree with this learned traveler in a few ways, and we'll point to these differences as they arise.

M. le Gentil rightly observes that the changes of monsoon do not offer the Philippines the same regularity than in many other parts of the torrid zone: by the way, downstream winds, which are constant at sea, are not not always in Manila; they usually blow from fifteen days to three weeks, in whose intervals they stop, to let the other winds blow, especially those from the south to the east. These occasions, when they are not not accompanied by rain, are called *collas secas*.

Sometimes *collas* are usually followed by storms that the Spaniards call tempestades and the indios *vaguios*, during which the wind passes successively through all areas of the compass; they constitute these hurricanes frightful who devastate the fields, uproot the largest trees, overthrow houses, take away debris, throw ships on the coast and often push them up to the middle astonished populations. Storms during which the dazzling lightning flashes one another almost without interruption, and the long and majestic bearings of thunder extend into the mountains and within the vast virgin forests crowning them, complete the picture atmospheric vicissitudes of the most beautiful country, the richest, the most delicious, the most picturesque of the earth.
When we witness one of these great convulsions of the nature, we are convinced that in the physical world as in the moral world, God wanted to allow that forever evil was placed beside the good, so that man could, at any time, remember his weakness, without ever taking pride of its advantages.

At the moment when the sun rises and when the vaguios approach, it is, in general, the most beautiful weather in the world; mountains only are crowned with a slight haze to smoke. In the course of the morning, this mist spreads over all the sky it covers as a transparent veil that does not steal the rays of the sun, but at the same time it gradually thickens around mountains, where it does not take long to form large clouds, and in the afternoon, a terrible storm breaks out; it lasts one hour and a half or two hours and more, after which the sky clears up again and the night is beautiful.

M. le Gentil assures that, by a large number of observations he made in the torrid zone, he acknowledged that the lower layer of clouds that form ordinary thunderstorms does not rise more than 450 fathoms perpendicular height; above this layer he often saw one another much higher, rare and untied, having almost always a direction contrary to the layer from below, but very little movement.

As the south-west monsoon succeeds, as you have said, that of the north-east, and this is what is called winter in Manila; but it's never cold enough to get warm, and the trees keep their leaves all year round. This season is without contradicts, the most pleasant. During the month of February, who is the coldest of the year, the thermometer does not go down, in the plains, below 17 ° Centigrade, and in January

it usually marks from 19 to 20 °; at this temperature, we endure very well, at night, a blanket of wool: in the afternoon it rises to 50 and 32 °, sometimes even more than 35° Centigrade.

To give a more accurate idea of the climate of Manila, we will present an analysis of meteorological observations made by Monsieur le Gentil for a whole year; we will only make an observation about them, that is that the degrees of the thermometer always seem to us a not too high during the day, which we attribute to the nature of the instrument the observer used; it was a thermometer of Réaumur: at the time when he was writing, these thermometers were always in the spirit of wine, and all physicists know that it is impossible to give this instrument the accuracy of those who make themselves into mercury; they always mark a degree too high when the temperature is above zero and too low when it is below.

January 1767. North wind. Good weather, often overcast, but little rain: thermometer at the lowest, 16 ° Reaumur; at the highest, 26° ½ at 28° ½.

February. Northeast wind. Good weather during the first half of the month; covered during the rest, without rain: thermometer, from 15 ° ½ to 28 ° ¾.

March. The winds start to vary. Good weather; a few storms towards the end of the month: thermometer, from 16 ° ½ to 33.

April. On the 6th, the wind passes to the south, but variable; the weather beautiful in the morning; lightning almost every night, several thunderstorms and several rainy days during the last half of the month; heat: the thermometer, at sunrise, 20 to 21 °; at the hottest time of the day, 55 to 55 °.

May. Variable winds, but almost always from east to South; thunder every night and rain in torrents: thermometer, at sunrise, 22 to 25 °; at its maximum, 52° at 55°.

June. During the first half of the month, variable winds blowing from all points of the horizon; few thunderstorms but a lot of lightning. From 14 to 19, east-south-east and south-east wind with terrible storms; during the rest of the month, winds very variable; very few thunderstorms and very little rain. Thermometer, at sunrise, 21° to 25° ; at the highest, 51 to 54 °; once, on the 20th, he ascended to 56 ° Reaumur.

July. During the first half, east and south wind, sometimes from the northeast; the very beautiful mornings, the very ugly nights, magnificent nights. In general, it's raining in Manila more day than night. The rest of the month, wind from west and no thunderstorms. From 1st to 15th, minimum, 22 to 25 °; maximum, 51 to 53 ° | : from 16 to 51, minimum, 21 to 22 °; maximum, 32°. Rise from west, passing through a large stretch of sea, always lower the thermometer.

August. Winds very variable throughout this month, with storms whenever the wind does not blow from the west. This month is the worst that has been observed since the beginning of the year: storms, rains by torrents and large variations in temperature. From 1st to 20th, minimum, 22 to 25 °; maximum, 30 to 35 °. From 21 to 31, the maximum decline; it is only 24 to 27 °.

September. Winds on the west side; inconstant time, many thunderstorms, but very little rain: the thermometer, in its maximum, sits at 50 °; minimum, 20 to 21 °.

October. Until the 20th, very variable winds and weather much hotter by the sensation that it causes than by the elevation of the thermometer, which does not rise above 31 ° ½ and almost always marks 27° ½ at 29 ° ½. Many great gusts of wind, and especially the 25th; this one spills a lot of Indian huts that he even destroys completely, also the Spaniards call these hurricanes the tremors unearthed indios: in this evening, all villages around Manila flooded and covered several feet of water in their streets; at St. Matthew of Mont, a village 4 or 5 leagues from Manila, he perishes at least fifty people.

November. Season of northeast winds; very good weather, few days covered, but little rain: maximum of heat, 28 to 29 ° a day (25th), 50 ° C.; minimum, 49° to 20 °.

December. Northeast wind; bad weather until 5, variable from 6 to 17; the rest of the month is very beautiful: the thermometer, minimum, 48 to 20 °; maximum, the first five days, from 221 to 24 ° f: from 6 to 47, 27 i to 28 ° ?; the days of rain, 25 to 25 °; from 48 to 54, 26 i to 27 ° ½ .

The amount of rain that falls in Manila is, year average of 98 inches: the maximum observed was 444 inches and the minimum of 84 inches; in May 1749 and in February 1805 the hail fell.

The purity of the nights facilitates the observation of the stars shooting; we see a large number in Manila.

To complete the climate of the Philippines, it remains to indicate the effects it has on man, and the most common diseases in these islands.

The air in the Philippines is generally healthy, and there are few diseases, endemic; downstream winds open the pores and make a lot of perspiration, advantageous effect to the health of man. It has been noticed that the stay of these islands is less fatal to older people than to young people, which comes from the fact that the former are more cautious and avoid with more care the excesses of all kinds.

Like everywhere else, high places are healthier that those who are in the valleys, and those who are exposed to the sea winds are more exposed than those who are sheltered. Ground winds over vast forests virgins produce intermittent fevers the provinces of Cagayan, Pangasinan and Nueva Ecija are particularly exposed and whose soldiers there are sent often become the victims.

We do not need to point out that the climate of the Philippines is more beneficial to the natives than Europeans. Indios maintain robust health at a very advanced age, and we see men of eighty years working with a vigor almost equal to that people in the prime of life; there's a lot centenarians in the country.

One of the most common diseases is chronic dysentery; it often lasts for whole years

without being able to stop it: this disease presents besides, a particular character as affection nervous, the remedies that are used with the most success to combat it are plant laxatives, such as oil of castor hanging in 4 ounces of gummy vehicle.

Cholera-morbus Asiatic was epidemic in 1820; it was cured by means of purgatives and emetics more heroic. At that time, a French doctor, Mr. Godefroy, became the victim of his zeal; he was massacred, with a large number of foreigners, by the population of Manila. The epidemic reappeared in 1842, shortly after our departure: we predicted the return by observing the atmospheric constitution of the year and the diseases that reigned before. Moreover, during our long stay in the Philippines, we only had two well settled cases: let us, on this occasion, to claim the honor of having, the first, employed with success, in Spain, in 1834, the olive oil in emetic dose to cure this dreadful affection.

Among the other diseases that we encounter in the Philippines, we will mention elephantiasis, leprosy, the fire of St. Antoine, the *Berbu*, which is a condition characterized by a considerable swelling of the belly and that kills frequently the patient. The so-called evil *pasar el hambre* (leave to go hungry), of which we have often seen examples, kill the indios with great speed. Syphilis is very indolent and easy to treat, whatever our pathologists say; she never resisted more than fifteen or twenty days in the hospital we were responsible for: the natives cure her by the simplest methods and some of which are very curious.

Although these islands are not as exposed to lung diseases that we are in Europe, we have seen a fairly large number of acute diseases of this organ, such as the most serious pneumonia, presenting all the symptoms of those of Europe, and some pleurisy. The pulmonary *phthisis* are, in general, the result of imprudences that commit the sick and passion of the indio for the bath, which he takes in any position and at all the hours of the day. Is he cold, he bathes; does he have fever, he bathes. Most women, especially those villages or provinces and all savages, without exception, go to bathe as soon as they have given birth, taking with them their newborn. It is certain that a lot of them are perfectly fine, but do not count the number of those who die.

There may be no such carefree people in the world as the Indian when he is sick: subject to a large number skin diseases, he pays no attention; the *bubas*, a species of ulcerated syphilis, of a very serious nature, occupies it hardly, and when he thinks of it, he treats himself without calling foreign councils.

The medicines used by the natives of the country are all drawn from the vegetable or animal kingdom; they use also external repellents; they have the greatest confidence in their mediquillos, and it must be admitted that there are some who, through long experience they have acquired, know how to heal admirably certain affections that the most learned doctors abandon as incurable. We must say the same of Chinese doctors, true empiricists and charlatans who, at Manila, have an abundant drug pharmacopoeia quite unknown to us: of this number are the sincat, aca, which they use in abdominal affections, in those bronchi and that I saw often to produce marvelous effects, even in pulmonary phthisis; they also have remedies for convulsions of children, wonderful plasters and a host of medications externally applicable.

More confident than us in the action of their drugs, they do not bleed or apply leeches in any way circumstance; they are particularly fond of topicals, repellents and derivatives.

The indios are very adept at removing pustules from the equals the animalcule they call arador or cagao; they found in a small duct placed next to the pustule, and they pick it up with the tip of a needle, for the place on the nail where it is seen walking. Thanks to the excellent view of which they are gifted and to their observant mind they knew this animalcule from time immemorial and the for many years, whoever wanted to see him, while we were still, in France, offering prices to who could find out about it, and to treat Mr. Latreille because we could not, like him, have the find. We will have occasion to return, in the course of this book, on the way the natives and the Chinese treat diseases.

CHAPTER VII.
NATURAL HISTORY.

Mineral kingdom.

Gold. - Iron. - Magnet. - Copper. - Lead. - Sulfur. - Coal. - Limestone. - Plaster. - Marne. - Agate. - Jasper and carnelian.- Salts.- Touchstone. - Rock crystal. - Mineral water.

The mineral kingdom is richer in the Philippines than in no other country in the world; Above all, it is abundant the two most needed metals to man, gold and iron.

There are very few provinces that give gold because almost every river rolls and we get it by washing; it abounds especially in the provinces of Caraga, Misamis, Camarines, Nueva-Ecija and Gapan. Places the richest in gold are Benguet, Suguk and Apayao, in the Caraballo; Paracole and Mamburao, in the Camarines; Pitao and Pijoluan, in the province of Misamis, and the mountains of Caraga and Cebu. In the island of Mindanao, gold is so common, that, for lack of cash, the indios wear usually on them sandbags and gold shot, which they use not only for the purchases they make, but still in cockfights, for which they are so passionate: on entering, they draw their little bag in which they take, with the fingers, a pinch more or less strong, according to the bet that he wants to risk in favor of such or such animal. It is assured, moreover, that one would find gold in all the provinces of this archipelago if one wanted to give oneself the trouble of looking for him. All the independent peoples, especially those of Mindanao, take care of it. The inhabitants mountains, which still live in the wild, such as the Igorrotes, the Mónteseos, the Tinguianes, bring them to sell to the capitals of the various provinces. Gold of Gapan is the purest; it is 22 carats.

It is rare for gold to be traded commercially. pieces a bit strong: the carelessness of the indios is so great, that they wash the sand only when the need there forces; because they know that in a few moments they will collect thus enough to feed their family for several days. No gold mines have yet been discovered properly say; however our compatriot, Mr. Oudan de Virlis, intelligent and hard-working man who lives in the Philippines for a long time, has recognized some veins in the mountains of Caraga (Mindanao Island), where he lives in the middle savage tribes, whose habits he has

owns idioms. Gold sells, in general, at 22%. the tael. The main use of this metal is for jewelery; the rest is sold to Chinese and mestizos who trade.

Iron mines are very numerous, but there are none very little in operation: it results from experiments made repeatedly that the Philippine iron is as good than that of Bizkaia. In the province of Bulacan and Morong, it is found almost on the ground; it is mostly of a superior quality in the province of Laguna as well as Antipolo.

In Angat, in the province of Bulacan, there is a mine of iron that was operated for some time by the father of the current owner, Don Juan Escalante, from whom we got these details, and who assured us that the ore was making 80 per cent. The product of this mine was sent mainly to Nueva España, where we still see, at this that we believe, in the fort of Saint-Jean d'Ulloa, cannons bearing the name of Manila and the date of the year in which they were melted. Moreover, the blast furnaces which had been established near the Angat Iron Mine have been abandoned, under the pretext that the location, located in the mountains and surrounded by rocks, is unhealthy. There is now, in this place, only a Chinese who exploits in his own way this rich mine, and iron he draws he makes stoves [carajays] and knives (boloes) for use by the indios. It would be easy to establish factories, because nearby there is a small river could try to take advantage. The products would be transported to China, as well as to the surrounding archipelagos, and the Spanish ships that will now visit the ports from South America would open markets for it.

The Magnet abounds in the vicinity of these iron mines, and it is not uncommon to find considerable masks.

We have seen beautiful and rich samples of Copper, and we were assured that there were mines in Pampanga, the Batangas and even in Mindoro.

As for lead, it has not yet been found in nature; but various circumstances make it impossible to doubt that exists in the country and especially on one of the banks from Bay Lake: we have acquired the proof ourselves. In one of the frequent trips we made to Pagsanjan, to visit the excellent Mr. Santos, alkalde of the province of the Laguna, from which the hospital door opens to all travelers who show up, we went down the beautiful river Bunbungan, whose navigation is not without danger, since twice we had to perish there: now, one day, the men who! ran our canoe [banquero] us drove to a spring between Mabitac and Paete. The water was blackish and spread a pretty strong smell of hydrogen sulphide, which had caused him to the indios the name of mabajon tubic, water that stinks; She goes out of the mountain, and its black and metallic color, attached to its smell, made us conclude that it was a hydrosulphide of lead, metal whose mountains were to harbor mines.

In an essentially volcanic country, where we meet at each step craters, some extinct, others still in full ignition, the Sulfur must necessarily be abundant: all provinces produce but it is especially in those of Leyte, Sambales, Albay and in the island of Mindanao that we find more large quantity.

Coal abounds in different provinces, but it has not not yet exploited in large. We have seen some very fine specimens from the province of Albay; they had been sent to Manila by Mr. Penarando, who offered to ship to the factories of that city; but he

seems that, although it is almost at the ground level, exploitation and transportation costs make it come back more expensive than that of Europe. Limestone is everywhere, and yet there is many places, like, for example, Manila and its surroundings, where we prefer to use oyster shells, that we burn to make lime. Plaster (yeso) is more rare; however it does not miss not absolutely, and you get it everywhere with enough ease.

Marble of all colors and all kinds abounds in the Phillippines ; but there has been little thought of exploiting careers: there are beautiful ones in the mountains of Mariveles, and the whole province of Bataan is full of them. This is only in some churches that marble was used for ornaments. Indifference in this respect is so great, that an alkalde of Bataan told us to have extracted blocks huge, but did not find to get rid of it.

Some provinces also provide Agate, Jasper and Cornalines.

The natives of the country know the use of Sulfate iron and certain crystallized salts which they order in some diseases. Negros Island provides Magnesia, and in the village of Dauin we find calcined Alum, at which the Montescos have been healing for a very long time esquinancies, infusing it in the throat through a bamboo tube.

Finally we will mention again, among the minerals that produce the Philippine Islands, the touchstone, the Crystal of rock and different stalactites, but about which we can not give any details, which should not be amaze in a country where the exact information is so difficult to obtain where communications are scarce and where no skilled chemist or mineralogist has yet penetrated: there must necessarily be content with what chance present you or what you can conclude reports deprived of the necessary knowledge.

Mineral waters can not fail to be common in a country where nature is so prodigiously fertile in products of all kinds, and where the hilly soil and volcanic some of the provinces offers the circumstances the most favorable to their production. Indeed, sulphurous thermal waters are found in Banos, near from the shores of Lake Bay, in Laguna province. A small establishment, almost abandoned today, receives the soldiers sent from the Manila hospital. We We have already spoken of the so-called *mabahong tubig* waters.

The ferruginous waters of Pagsanjan are highly the province of Laguna; those of Antipolo enjoy a great reputation: patients go there every year, the time of the feast of the Virgin of Antipolo, which is prolonged during two novenas. On all sides arrive on pilgrimage a huge crowd of indios, mestizos, Chinese, Spanish; they attend and report on the great procession images of the Virgin, rosaries, oils blessed. The village of Antipolo is located on the top of highest mountains surrounding Lake Bay: this is an admirable position. By going up there, we discover successively : first the lake, then a large part of the province Laguna, then Tondo; finally Manila, the bay, the various villages which border it, the islands of which it is dotted, and all those places to which a trained eye knows attach their names as he recognizes them through an approach telescope. We would have a hard time make our readers understand the enchanting beauty of this site and the enjoyment offered by the small trip of Antipolo, which is part by water, on the Pasig River, and part in litter species or bamboo hammocks worn

by two men. Devotees go on foot or even barefoot; but most have no other purpose than to have fun. The Chinese, greedy, go there to feast.

The waters of the Chorrillo de Mariquina enjoy a great reputation in Manila; it is claimed that they are ferruginous ; but as they are very limpid, odorless, and tasteless, we do not believe they have other properties that would not have any spring water on people accustomed to drink only rainwater stored in algibes or cisterns, or that of river always a little brackish.

Pagsanjan, capital of the province of Laguna, has also a precious thermal spring on the edge of the Bunbungan River; it goes down, through an underground conduit, from the top of a mountain and comes out from below ground, by a jet that may be nearly 4 inches in diameter, for fall into a pool 6 to 8 feet long by 5 to broad, carved in the rock and containing 4 to 5 feet of water limpid and warm, but whose height can be reduced to will. The source is covered by a small house, which unfortunately falls into ruins, for want of care. The trees surrounding it and shading it form a roof greenery, because she has no other. We arrive there by degrees practiced in the rock and whose color indicates the presence of a ferruginous principle. These waters are excellent for people who are recovering after have suffered from abdominal disorders, for those who have skin diseases and even for people who enjoy of perfect health, which their use tends to consolidate, by joining the approval of a picturesque site that must not all its beauties only to nature. We arrive there by pirogue (banca), by the river, whose clear waters reflect the trees that grow on its edges, as well as the bamboos that fall back in graceful plumes, and whose summits come moisten on its surface. Monkeys slide down along the branches to quench their thirst. Within this delicious nature, the silence is interrupted only by the measured embedment of the paddle that serves to steer your boat, by the cry of the monkeys, by the singing of the birds, by the quivering that produces in the foliage the escape of the fat lizard called iguana, by the footsteps of the young buffalo running after his mother and those of the escaping wild boar of the man. Everything enchants and delights in these places where nature seems to have exhausted its treasures to give this soil wild that it has the richest and most beautiful, to this air all she caresses more and more embalmed, to this water its most salubrious principles, and to this heaven a purity that hurricanes alone sometimes alter.

Analyse des eaux minérales de los Baños.

Hydrochlorate de chaux.	60 grains.
— de magnésie. . . .	2 ½
— de soude..	26
Sulfate de chaux.	4 ½
Fer.	0 ½
Silice..	8
	101 ½

Analyse des eaux de San Juan del Monte.

Hydrochlorate de chaux.	2 grains.
Sulfate de chaux.	2
Hydrochlorate de soude.	1 ½
Carbonate de potasse.	4
Matière organique ou extractive. .	3
	12 ½

CHAPTER VIII.
NATURAL HISTORY.
Vegetal kingdom.

Rice. - Sugar. - Abaca. - Indigo. - Corn. - Coffee. - Cotton. - Coconut. - Tobacco. - Its manufacture. - Cannellier. - Pepper. - Chilli pepper.- Giroflier.- Cabonegro.- Tamarin. - Maïs.- Sweet potato.- High trees and other trees. - Banana tree. - Fruit trees. - Plants from Europe. - Fruits. - Flowers.

Everyone knows how rich, majestic nature is and active in all the lands under the zone torrid; but among these countries, however favored they may be, there may be none where she is more beautiful and more fertile than in the Philippines. Not only the plains, but up to the highest mountains are covered with a spontaneous vegetation, perpetual, always green, maintained by the abundant dews of the night, which revive it after days of excessive heat. The mountains are crowned with gigantic trees that the eye has only seen from a distance; islands, fresh bunches of greenery, charm the browser when they appear to his looks at the ends of the horizon, and delight him to

ecstasy when he comes closer. Oh! who could paint the sensation that a European feels, transported for the first time within these solitudes vast and melancholy where he hears only the twitter birds, screams of monkeys and rustle of leaves agitated by the wind! Surrounded on all sides by the magnificent spectacle of these virgin and primitive forests, everything speak of the greatness of the LORD, everything raises his heart and the door to the Creator, which we can not tire of admiring wonders.

We will end this chapter with particular details on the different species of wood provided by the Philippines; but we think we should start the description of the plant kingdom in this beautiful and rich colony by that plants of great commercial production, and at their head occupies the Rice.

Rice is undoubtedly the most important product of the Philippine archipelago it makes one hundred and fifty percent to the farmer. It is divided into two main species: the rice of the plains and that of the mountains; but, by subdividing still, we find more than thirty different kinds, among which distinguishes quiriri, quinarayan and romero, that the inhabitants of the pueblo de Viñan, who produces them, call señores arrozes, to paint the superiority of their quality.

All these different species of rice form, in proportion of their quality, the main food of men and animals; their culture costs almost no work to the indio, it is even for him a source of pleasure, because he loves water and mud almost as much as the buffalo his comrade of plowing.

Mountain rice is planted after the first rains; the wild tribes and a large part of the rest of the population at that time burn grasses and trees, and then, with a little stick, a hole in the ground to throw the rice seed; it's in the month of June that we sow that of the plains; we throw it in the mud after having spent there the penalty (comb); the nursery (binji) is formed, from where the plants are pulled when they have reached the height of 8 to 10 inches, to replant them at greater distances from each other. The harvest is done in November, ear by ear, and then everyone, men, women, children, old men, goes to work with the same ardor: it's a party for the family. We start by gathering the rice in bunches and grinding wheels; then we separate the grain from the straw by treading it on the feet: this rice, then cleaned from its envelope using of the pestle or some machines, is called *bigas*. It's *kanin,* or morisqueta, when cooked in water and ready to to be eaten. There are no artificial irrigations, as in other parts of Oceania, for example, at Java, where the land is less fertile, because it is fatter, needs to be more soggy. In the Philippines nature do everything, and the sky seldom refuses the water that the earth requires for its culture. What beautiful show do they offer, these rice fields, rising in tiers, which are discovered in certain parts of the country! It is in the vast plains that extend between Mariquina and Pasig that rice is called by the natives as *macan*, and, on the mountainside, the *Mangara*, whose grain is bigger and harder. In some provinces two harvests a year, or after the harvesting rice maize is planted; in this case, when the rice has himself succeeded to sugar cane, which often happens, the earth happens to have been productive throughout the course of the year. As for rice, its cultivation is limited to throwing grain in the mud, to tear it out, to replant it and to harvest it, without it requires, moreover, no care during its growth.

The *caban*, a measure of the country and which equals 135 pounds, worth 12 francs in first quality; but in general, we buy rice for 8 or 9 francs. In the interior of country, it is of a more moderate price still, and the Indian of the companion, to whom lepalay only returns 5 francs, the pile itself, with the help of his wife, in his mortar or losong, whenever he wants to use it for his meals.

Regardless of the large domestic consumption, rice is for the Philippines an object of trade in more important; many are sent to China, where, for the crop has been poor, there is a price very high ; he receives a free entry fee, and when brings a certain amount, it frees even of all rights the ship that wants to go up the Canton river up Whampoa.

After the rice comes the **sugar cane**: it is planted to the months of March and April, so that it is already strong when come the rains; the quality is excellent. There are two species, red and green; though bigger than the one of Java, it does not have knots as far apart as Sandwich Islands. This last species has been cultivated since some time in the house (hacienda) of Jalajala, located on the Bay Lake. This beautiful property has passed hands of M. de la Gironnière in those of MM.Vidie, French as him, and who hold it like him on the best foot.

The indio crushes the cane under a stone mill (trapiche) and cook the juice in earthen vessels; but these operations have improved since an industrialist Mr. Delaunay, who succumbed to an excess of work, imported from the Bourbon Island in the Philippines art to build the stoves that he had adopted in Calauan, property of Mr. Inigo de Azola, and in those of MM. Vidie and Mr. Domingo Rojas, the most advanced planters of the archipelago.

Three types of sugar are known commercially: the white, which is worth 5 to 4 piastres picol or pecul; the brown or prieto, which sells from 2 to 2 1/2 piastres for the New Holland. This second species mingles with another, more still common, for the use of the indios, who make it several kinds of dulces or sweets, like, among others, the panochia, which is made with common sugar and the coconut poured into a part of the bark of this fruit, of which it takes the form: it is often the dish of ordinary gentleness of the Indian; he seasoned his cooked rice and can not dispense with chewing a few pieces before to drink his water, the only liquid that he moistens his meals and that it only takes after they are finished.

These are the provinces of Pampanga, Bulacan and Laguna that provide the best sugars; lower qualities come from Cebu or Iloilo; the time of harvest varies by province.

Abaca is the bast of Musa textilis, a species of banana which produces only a small fruit of poor quality; he is plant by cuttings and multiplies with extraordinary promptness it is not found in all provinces; where it grows, it is most often used to defend cocoa trees from the heat of the sun.

There are several qualities of abaca according to the various filament species it provides, and each of these qualities bears a different name: it is after three years that one can begin to remove the bark or outer leaf of this palm tree, when it becomes black at its upper end already inclined. It is cut by strips, it is crushed to blows or

using an instrument similar to that which is used in Europe to rust hemp; we expose it then in the sun, taking care that she does not receive rain; then we shake it, wash it, dry it again, it is gathered by bales squeezed of a pecul that one sells 2 piastres in the province, 5 1? 2 and 4 piastres in Manila: we start removing the fibers every month, until that the tree has reached the age of five to seven years.

Abaca is grown in many provinces, but the most esteemed ones come from that of Albay and, in this one, more particularly of the pueblos of Donsol, Sorsogon, Tabaco, Cameli and Quipa. We use this quality, mixed with silk, to make the fabrics for use by the indios, called sinamay; the guinaras are other coarser fabrics, which are the same with of the abaca.

This palm also grows abundantly in the province of Leyte, around the villages of Maasim, Hilongos, Solmo, Carigara, Balobo, Tanauan, Calvallo, Catalaman, Catubic, Palapa, Besonhem, Guinan, Basey, Paranas, and in the villages of Gagayan-Chico, deCaminguin, etc., of the province of Misamis.

The export of this material, having been during long enough very little important, increases prodigiously and from one day to the next, although she has like all products of stagnation intervals: this favor is due to the removal of the exit duties. These are especially the United States buildings that load this item: you will find more details about this in the trade chapter.

The **Buri** where buli (Corypha) is a palm tree whose leaves used to make mats and other useful objects: boiling the thorns and pulling some of the threads with which one makes mats of a particular kind called *sagouran*. Flowers are extracted the liquor called tuba and sugar, which we shall have occasion to speak afterwards; we get some also the *yoro*; this tree blooms only once and dies as soon as the seed is ripe. With the fruits we make rosaries.

Indigo (Indigofefa tinctoria), known in the Philippines, as in all the Spanish colonies, under the name *añil*, is generally of a higher quality in these islands. Three species are known: the provinces of Ilocos and Pangasinan are those who produce the quantities more considerable; but the indigo tree also grows abundantly in those of Pampanga, Bataan, Laguna, of Tayabas and Camarines, whose soil, very humid, is particularly favorable.

The cultivation of **wheat** has not yet taken a great extension; the one that is harvested in the provinces is not enough to the consumption of the country, so that we are obliged to to come from China and India and that we even draw from flour from the United States. Moreover, the wheat of ilocos and that of Tayabas are the most esteemed: it is generally worth, on the place, from 5 to 6 piastres the picol of 50 gantes, or 153 4 / 2lbs English; but the price has sometimes risen to more than 8 piastres.

Cocoa (Theobroma cacao) sows in November and until January, in a colored ground, a little clay, after that the seeds of its capsule have been soaked for a few hours, in the water, leaving about 5 meters away to each foot, and planting them as much as possible, in the shade of the banana trees. Leyte, Negros Island, Cebu, Bohol, Samar, Misamis, Carraga, Laguna and Pangasinan are the provinces which all produce more

or less; but the largest quantities are found in Negros Island and in the provinces of Cebu and Samar. Cébu's cocoa is of a quality far superior to that the Caraques; that of Negros Island, where it grows spontaneously on the mountains inhabited by Igorrotes and Negritos, rivals that of Ternate and Manado.

Cocoa trees planted in the courtyards are sometimes found in houses, from which it has been concluded that the culture of this tree is not as delicate as it is claimed, and could with a little care extend it further. We mix often cocoa from the Philippines with that of Guayaquil, that it is easy to recognize by its inferior quality, as well as with the one the Chinese bring back from Ternate, which is good, but inferior to the cocoa of Bisayas.

All the product is consumed in the country; the natural ones take one or two times a day, as an infusion, as the Chinese take tea, soaking a broken sugar cane in pieces, for lack of sugar in kind: it would be very difficult to bring to Europe, because that it is about to rot and to be devoured by insects.

Coffee (Coffea arabica, Lin.) is a shrub that gives red fruits whose center is occupied by seeds which form what is called coffee. Whoever believes in Philippines provides a high quality bean; the coffee of provinces of Laguna, Tayabas and Batangas do not gives way to that of Java and Martinique, while that of Silang can fight against the seed of Moka.

Its abundance is so great that it grows spontaneously on many mountains; in some provinces there is no no house that is surrounded by a small planted fence in coffee trees; in a word, this shrub rises wherever the chance, either the careless hand of the Indian had left to fall the seed.

There are two species that are distinguished only by the bean size; he sells from 50 to 60 francs. picol.

The coffee of the year is green, and it is preferred to that of the previous year, whose color is darker and brownish. We did everything for its culture.

However, despite the admirable fertility of the soil and the great encouragement that the Economic Society, authorized by the government, gives to its culture, the premium of 40,000 francs, which she promises to anyone who would plant 60,000 feet of coffee, has only been obtained by Mr. Paul de la Gironnière and two other people.

The **cotton** tree (Gossypium herbaceum), which gives products superior even to that of Bombay and perhaps the world, is of two species, one of which forms a big tree and the other a small shrub. Cotton produced by the latter is sometimes white, sometimes color of cinnamon [coyote], The harvest, considerable as it is, is not enough point on demand, and most of it is absorbed by the manufactories of the interior. It is grown mainly in the provinces of Ilocos and Batangas.
After the cotton has been separated from the seed by a process very simple, it is brought to the Manila market, where puts him under enough pressure to reduce him to a very small volume; after which it is sent for its various destinations.

The indios are bringing him into a lot of their tissues, and it is in the province of Uocos that the most high consumption for the factories established there: those of Pangasinan, Laguna and Batangas in also make great use. It is mixed with silk to make trousers for the natives, or with pina and silk and even with abaca to make them shirts of a remarkable beauty called sinamay of sinulit.

The **coconut palm**, *nioc* of the Tagales [Cocos nucifera), is a plant most valuable, since we use the roots, the trunk, leaves and even the smallest parts of its fruit. This palm tree is found in all the provinces of the Philippines, but especially in those of Laguna, Leyte and Samar. In these provinces, the nut is extracted for a very superior oil, by quality, to that which comes from the Bisayas Islands, this that we must attribute to the difference of the processes we use to get it, one from cooking and the other of fermentation. The first is called olorosa Laguna oil, and the other caracoas oil, because it comes from the Bisayas in boats of this name: its foul smell made it also name *mabahong langis*, oil that smells bad.

The bark or pericarp of the coconut is made into tapers and serves to caulk the ships; it is also made of highly esteemed cables: with the husk the indio makes curious little furniture, where his patience is exercised in every way, as well as cups, spoons and kitchen utensils. Burning it makes vegetable black used for dyeing. The trunk and the leaves of the coconut tree are used in the making of the houses of the Indians, the first to make piles, the second to cover the roof. We weave the fibers of these same leaves and we make clothes, while their ribs make brooms. The nut confit itself to the sugar, or we draw from it a kind of wine, vinegar, and spirits. Water commonly called coconut milk has medicinal properties; it is a powerful diuretic and a laxative. The root, roasted in front of the fire, gives a decoction which the Indians regard as an excellent remedy in dysentery, and we have been ourselves in the case of employing it successfully.

Tobacco (*Nicotiana Tabacum*) is the most important trade object of this archipelago. Its leaves, which in all the provinces are of excellent quality, attain in some of them a point of perfection such that they bear comparison with those of Havana. The government has reserved a monopoly on the sale of tobacco. As for culture, it is free only in the Bisayas; in Luzon, on the contrary, it is subject to the control of the government. It allows the owners (*cosecheros*) of the cultivar in the Pampanga, in Gapan, in Nueva-Ecija and in the province of Cagayan; but he buys them the whole harvest at agreed prices.

Let us enter here in a few details on how to pick tobacco leaves, and on their delivery to the government in both provinces of Cagayan and Gapan.

The leaf of Cagayan tobacco is naturally dry and yellow; it is handed over to the alcalde colector of tobacco, which receives for emoluments so much percent of the value that him is delivered. Gapan's tobacco is a darker color; he is handed over to the factor, a kind of junior administrator, under the Director of Manille Tobacco and residing in the factory of Gapan. Guards, kind of customs, attend the picking, the product of which is carried in the crowds or hangars, where it is allowed to ferment in heaps; then it is sorted and formed into five classes, from the largest leaves to the smallest; women gather together sheets of each class and put them in tens, with little bamboo brooches they go through the ribs, after which they hang them, to dry them,

in a place exposed to a draft. Each of these packets of ten leaves is called a *palito*; ten *palito de a mano*, and thirty *mano* of a hundred leaves make a *fardo*. We then classify them again by first, second and third quality, and we pay them without weighing them, namely: the first quality at 8 p. 6 reals, the second at 7 p. and the third at 5 p. The first leaves should have about 28 centimeters long. Moreover, these prices are so low that farmers are looking for every possible way to do smuggling.

The *aforadores* recognize the tobacco whose fardos weigh 34k -1, 50; he is then charged, that of Gapan on boats called cascos, who go with an escort to Manila, and that of Cagayan on ships that will take in the river of this province. Arrived in Manila, the tobacco is stored to be sent, a part in leaves, in Spain, and the other part to the factories of colonial government, where it is manufactured. Control of new in Manila, it is distributed to the so-called dobladoras workers, which wet it, either with water, or, what is better, with vinegar or rum, as private individuals do. These same dobladoras also make cigars (tabacos) and give them to the celladoras, who check them. The interior of the cigars, named tripa, consists, in general, of lower tobacco or Gapan, while the outside, named capa, of a beautiful color, is Cagayan tobacco whose leaf was beaten and united by percussion repeated of a pebble which each worker is equipped for this use: also, when they want, as it happens sometimes, smuggling, the noise they make on the table with this pebble betrays them. When cigars are handled, they cut them off with scissors on a fragment of bamboo which they call mena; then they roll them on a solid surface to polish them and make them different packets sizes, each composed of ten cigars and that, according to their length, we call first or second mena, quinta or quarta superior.

That done, they bring the packages together to form crates of five hundred and a thousand cigars. The batidas, which meet in packs of thirty cigars, are manufactured with lower quality tobacco; these are consumed by the people of Manila; it exports only a very small amount.

The fragments of the leaves are used to make cigarettes, and this manufacture is entrusted to men who bend them and dispense them with the simple tact in small packages with a wonderful speed; these cigarettes are contained in small paper cases bearing the stamp of the factory.

Jean Dussoulier, our esteemed compatriot, forced to leave France during the regime of terror, entered serving Spain and was sent to Manila, where he occupies today the rank of lieutenant-colonel. He found the way to use even the smallest pieces of tobacco, even the defective leaves, scrapped factories, and that before he was forced to burn so they would not turn not for the benefit of smuggling. This industrious citizen in fact snuff. He provides this service free of charge to the government; but the colony does not attach so much importance that it should to the new industry that he has with.

Tobacco monopoly products increase significantly every year, to the point that the government has had to open new factories.

Let's move on to another product of the plant kingdom, to Cannellier (Cinnamomum), which is very abundant in the mountains from the island of Mindanao, but we have not yet had satisfying results, although it is claimed that a Dutchman once obtained

samples of good quality, and that Don Inigo de Azaola found some in the province of Laguna. It nevertheless seems certain that Filipino cinnamon is nothing but the variety which is called Cassia lignea officinarum (Laufus cassia, Bl.)

The **pepper** tree (Piper nigrum) gave, at one time, abundant products; but the indios, bored of such a careful harvest, gave it up to indulge in to coffee growing. This abandonment is to regret, because the Philippine pepper was of a superior quality.

The red pepper comes very well in the Bisayas and forms, for the indios, the main seasoning of their rice; this is a trait of resemblance of more than these peoples with the Malays of Java, of which he is the indispensable food. We assure that the clove [Caryophyllus aromaticus) and the Wild nutmeg (Myristica aromática) exist in the Islands of Mindanao and Palawan.

Cabonegro (Borassus gomutus of Lin.), Ijou or Gumuato of the Malays (Caryotaonusta, Bl.), is a species of palm tree which provides a very strong and incorruptible black thread: we find this tree on the edge of the rivers; its bark, when it gets old, becomes rough, opens by the high and lets see this species of black hemp. We make them cables for anchors and for mooring boats.

Tamarind (Tamarindus indica) grows abundantly in all the Philippine Islands, but the exploitation is neglected; its fruit is used only for seasoning dishes, in place of vinegar or as medicine; he could however become of great importance because it does not require point of culture expense and comes spontaneously wherever the seed falls, even on the roads.

Corn and **potato** (Convolvulus Batatas) replace the rice when the harvest was scarce or when the price in becomes very high for some reason. It is then that natives eat corn cooked in water or grilled.

Regardless of the many productions that we cannot enumerate and which are natural to the archipelago of Philippines, it would be enough to want to cultivate and obtain all those of the Moluccas.

We have to mention plants of all sizes that provide the people of the Philippines with resources to all their needs, from the strongest trees and more majestic whose proud peak amounts to a immense height, up to the humble mulberry, indispensable silk factories, which we neglect to use. The virgin forests of this archipelago would be enough to to provide wood throughout Europe; we can even advance boldly that one finds there almost all the species that produce Asia and America. There grow and the woods dyeing, such as logwood, and timber the hardest. There are the Molave and the Banava, which resist water for many centuries; Teak (Tectonia grandis) grows in Mindanao; *Palomaria* provides a balm precious; the mangrove everywhere covers the shore of the sea; *Mangatchapui*, *Guijo*, the *Yacal* are used for framing; for moldings and ornaments we find the black ebone, the *Camagon*, ebony species with white vein, the *alintatao*, wood of a brownish color, with veins very broad, yellow like saffron; the *Malapatay*, which is yellow and black; the *Cansilay* of Negros Island is white veined of rose. With the *Narra*, a species of reddish mahogany, one makes tables of twenty cutlery in one piece and even large doors: the Tindalo is sometimes black and sometimes red and the *Lanete*, which all white is likely to take a very beautiful polite.

Most of these woods are of such hardness that better tools are broken by working them, and, in number, there are some that naturalists have not yet classified. Some arrive in Manila Bay, by the rivers or by the Bay Lake; others go down the mountains from the Nueva-Ecija, dragged by hundreds of buffaloes mounted by as many natives, as far as the Gapan River, from where they are conducts afloat on the arsenal of Cavite, whose yards were building formerly the galleons; there are also soft woods and light ones which one makes pirogues and paraos of only one piece. Mrs Ana-Maria de Cordova, woman of a rare deserves, and to which I am indebted for the most interesting notes about his country, assured us that while her husband was governor of the island of Negros, where this colonel was murdered by treason, he had built, with a single tree trunk, a small schooner to which one only added the planks.

We had obtained samples of all these different species of wood that we forgot to Cadiz to our return from the Philippines and that we could not find. We are regretfully unable to extend more extensively on this matter. Mr. Colonel Gen. D. Th. Cortes has formed a general picture of the woods of Philippines; he considered all those who exist in this archipelago by indicating their indigenous names, their use, their elasticity, and all their physical properties. To give an idea of the woods already studied in the forests from the Philippines we will say that the province of Cavity in produces twenty-three different species; the province of Ilocos norte, which has been one of the best explored, provides a hundred sixteen species; Bataan, sixty; the Laguna, thirty; Tayabas, forty five; Nueva-Ecija, thirty-eight; Mindao, thirty-five; Misamis (very little explored), six; Negros Island, sixty-five; Bulacan, thirty; Leyte, forty-five; Capis, twenty-five; Antique, twenty-three; Camarines, forty-five; Ilocos sur, thirty five; Zambales, twenty-six.

Next to these majestic trees, forest giants, grow more modest ones whose tasty fruits provide to the inhabitants a food as healthy as pleasant.

There are more than fifty varieties in the Philippines of banana trees (Musa paradisiaca), all known by the natives under the name of Saguing. There are many who have not yet studied by botanists but at most from which we have given names that have been classified according to goodness fruits; in the number, we quote the Bungulan, the Lacatan, the Obispo, the Tonduque, the Gloria, the Letondal (so called the name of the French missionary who imported it into this country), the Pepita, the Morada, the Saba.

The Mango Tree [Mangifera indica), whose fruit is found nowhere so developed and so exquisite, counts, as the Banana, a lot of different species. We could almost the same as orange varieties (Citrus aurantium), Citrus (Citrus notissima, Bl.), Grapefruit (Citrus decumana), Attier (Annona squamosa), Lanzonier (a new genus of P. Blanco, which he must be classified in Meliaceae), Sapotillier (Sapote nigra, Bl.), Jaquier (Artocarpus integrifolia), Jambosiers Tampoy and Macupa, rose-scented fruits (Eugenia malaccensis, Eugenia jambos), from Letchier (Euphoria Litchi), the Mabolo (Diospiros kaki), Santol (Sanclorium ternalum, B.), Lomboy (Calyptranthes gambolana), guava (Psidium aromaticum, Pineapple (Bromelia Ananas, the Piña of the Tagales), whose leaves are used in the manufacture of fabrics valuable and inimitable known as piña and nipis and also from almost all fruit trees, from the tropics to first

rank of which we must place without doubt the Mangosteen [Garciana mangostana, Lin.), which is believed to grow in abundance, in the island of Mindanao.

All these fruits serve, in all this archipelago, to make excellent jams (dulces), which are also made with Fucus called Gulaman (Fucus Gulaman, BL). As soon as you enter in a Manila house, rich or poor, because the inhabitants Filipinos are considerate and polite, we do not miss not to offer you some of these delicacies accompanied by the obligatory glass of water, the cigar of Cagayan or Gapan and sometimes even aromatic betel you are obliged to accept it because you refuse would be almost an offense for them.

Among the fruits and vegetables of Europe, there are many who would succeed in Manila, provided that care was taken to shelter them against the too great heat, which would make them degenerate. There are melons of different species and excellent watermelons (Sandia); the grape vine is delicious in Cavite, but we have not yet been able to obtain it elsewhere. In vegetable gardens, cabbages, lettuce, asparagus, peas, large and small beans and other legumes.

With the Pajos (Paho mangifera, Bl.), Banquilin or *Iba* [Cicca acidissima, Bl.), Balimbin (Averrhoa carambola), the Camias (Averrhoa bilimbi) and the small Mangoes still green, canned pickles and even salt water, hors d'oeuvres (apetitos) which are well priced, whose inhabitants are so fond of eating up to to become sick; the excesses they commit in this genre are one of the causes of dyssentery that removes one if large number.

There are still plants in this country that provide delicious starches from many provinces do their main food when the rice comes to miss; such are the Curcuma angustifolia, Tacca pinnatifida, the Sagus Rumphii, the Corypha, of which we make mats called sabouran, wine and sugar, which give Yarrow-root or iourou, the Gaogao, a species of sago, the Bouri.

We will still mention, in the roots, the yam, the sweet potato, the icama, the gabi and that of Ficus aspera, which is found in some provinces and provides up to two and even three bottles of water to the altered traveler.

Among the medicinal plants that grow in the Philippines, we count the cassier, the tamarind, the tangantangan, quipquina and other precious barks more or less astringent, still unknown roots, purgatives of all species, caustics, antispasmodics, diuretics and very energetic emmenagogues; finally a pharmacopoeia all new we do not know most plants only by the names that the indios gave them such are the Macabujay (Menispermumrimosum, Bl.), the Lagondi (vitex trifolio, altissima), the Aligbayon, the Calachuchi (Plumería blanca), which we ourselves have often wonderful effects. Also mountain doctors (medico mañga-bondoc) do they find ample at home, and without recourse to chemical preparations, all the medical matter they need; they are grateful roots and barks with a ray tail, and then, administering them as a decoction and applying the leaves as topical, they often heal, by simple empiricism, diseases that would resist the most skillful.

The countryside is adorned with an extraordinary abundance flowers of an admirable beauty, but which, in general, are deprived of perfume, though, by exception, one find

some that exhale the sweetest smell: these flowers are, among others, the Rose of China (Hibiscus rosa sinensis), the Passion flower (Passiflora), the Carallo, the orange blossom, the Tchampaca (Michelia champaca), the scent is so delicious and the indios braid crowns; the Ylañg-ilang (Unona odoratissima), the Caviqui, the fragrant Sampaguita (Nyctantes sambac). It is with this last flower that the indios prepare themselves, every morning, the essence they use for their toilet; they boil it in coconut oil, and its decoction then becomes what is called lagñis oloroso.

By enumeration, though imperfect, we can see that we have just made products of the vegetable kingdom in the Philippines, that this archipelago alone has all those which make the wealth of the countries that surround it, and that object of the envy of his neighbors, he himself has nothing to envy to nobody. There is the gigantic cedar whose roots earth outings have acquired, with a prodigious rise, a dimension so considerable that we can, without harming their solidity, piercing large openings to allow passage to a hitched car. Around his large trunk, the liana embraces and climbs to a height more than 200 feet, while the modest bindweed does not only a few feet from the ground. All this beautiful and rich vegetation, whose greenery never fades, offers the blow the most imposing and majestic eye possible to imagine. It's not just by their substance clean that these trees are useful; because besides the bees they deposit wax and honey, they give gums, gums-resins, balms, essences, and, in a word, all that man can ask of them.

CHAPTER IX.
NATURAL HISTORY.

Animal Kingdom.

There are no ferocious animals. - Buffaloes. - Boars. - Deer. - Goats.- Horses. -Boeufs.- Sheep. - Ploeomys. - Shrews.- Monkeys.- Tagua.- Birds. - Fishes - Crustaceans. Cayman. - Snakes. - Leeches. - Insects. - Shells.

The Philippine Islands are not infested by large carnivorous animals, such as tigers, rhinos meeting in Java. Some chroniclers claimed that there were elephants, which historical travelers repeat still after them, concerning the island of Soulou; they melted their opinion on what this animal has an indigenous name. We know that there are some on the island of Borneo, and that they abound in the forests that border the province of Wellesley.

The buffalo (caravao), which the Malays call karbo, this laborious native of the Indian archipelago, is, without question, the most important animal that the Spaniards encountered at the time of their discovery; the natives employed him at the rice cultivation. This quadruped, as hideous as it is indispensable to agriculture and big chores under the sky burning of the tropics, including the mountains of this archipelago contain many flocks, is the most precious when one has got to reduce it to domestic life in which it is most often high; he likes in the humidity and it works in the mud of the rice fields; his moments of rest he passes in the water; he would like to live there constantly; he is very strong, and, although his corpulence much better than beef, his agility is extraordinary; it crosses with ease the thickest jungles, and he climbs, loaded with heaviest burdens, the most high mountains and renders a thousand services to his master. Passionate for her infant, we saw the buffalo female

dive into lakes or rivers, and go on underwater, the caiman who had just removed it. At the wild state is a formidable enemy that the hunter must fear to meet; because sometimes he gets in a hurry, attacks passers-by, pursues them with audacity, and, if it happens the native to be happy enough to take refuge on a tree, he waits patiently, digs the ground with his horns and makes incredible efforts to uproot it. It is not without example that harmless people were torn apart by the buffalo that a single child drives daily, with the greater ease, in domestic life: I saw him, hitched to the kind of cart called careton, on which he dragging so heavy burdens, To be caught in a sudden frenzy, rush on passersby and hurt them mortally.

Boar is exquisite and preferred to domestic pork, which is much smaller than ours and looks like, for dimensions, to the Wampoha pig. The Flesh of Manila pigs is soft, bland and provides a unpleasant diet; it is only the Chinese who eat and be fond of it.

The deer, that we encounter at every step in the forests of the Philippines, is of remarkable beauty in some localities: as today, the aboriginals were feeding formerly of his fresh meat and made tapa; they simply cook it on the embers, and its smell, its exquisite taste reminiscent of those of the best salt meadow sheep. Like the leather and horns of the buffalo, the skin and the woods of the stags are trade items that the provinces of Pampanga and Pangasinan send to the market of Manila. The deer tendons are sold to the Chinese, who consider as aphrodisiacs and make it the largest case to export them to China. His flesh, fresh, soitsèche, is of great consumption in all the Philippines.

Goats swarm everywhere and are so common, that they often roam freely without anyone advertises; some patients drink their milk when that of mare, very popular in Manila, in a large number of diseases, is missing, or when buffalo milk, which is not so pleasant, is too nourishing for the sick to which it is administered.

The horse, a little better than our ponies and we pretends not to be native to the Indian archipelago, lies however, in the wild in the interior of Celebes, and also in the interior of the Philippines; it would have been imported, they say, of Spain: in this case, he would have kept nothing blood from the peninsular races. The degeneration would have had place, more particularly, in terms of size; because the small horses of the Philippines, though abandoned in forests, or poorly cared for and neglected in domestic life, do not lack elegance and even vigor, despite their apparent weakness: a hitch of two of these ponies easily trundles prams at least as big as those Europe. Are they chosen early and treated properly, they become luxury horses; but anyway, they are valuable for traveling through rocky trails mountains, torrents, muddy paths, that they cross. with ardor and although mounted by the strongest men: they come down with the same agility the fastest ribs, and, if they happen to do a faux pas, they fall instinctively on their knees and report immediately. Their hoof is so hard that they have never need to be shod. They are fed with fresh grass and paddock instead of oats; and we water them with sweetened water with molasses, which gives them the superiority that makes them distinguishes from those of Java. A very nice carriage costs 100 to 120 piastres (about 500 to 600 francs), and maintenance is so inexpensive, that the second lieutenant himself, in the pay of 55 piastres a month, still has his car.

The beef was imported from Spain and America, and despite the daily consumption that is made in all pueblos, he has multiplied so much, that we find, in forests, wild oxen mixed with flocks of buffalo. It has less strength, is smaller than those in Europe, and it is rarely used in hard labor. Her flesh, though less pleasant than that of European animals of its kind, does not fail to be sometimes tasty: that of the cow, called machora, is of a exquisite taste; we make excellent preserves.

Sheep abound in many provinces, and particularly in both Ilocos; but they are so little self treated, that they are puny, of a bad wool, are sold to prices and are not very popular, especially by the natives, who never eat; they were imported by the Spaniards.

We still find in the Philippines, among mammals of the genus Ploeomys, Ploeomys Cumingii. His fur is cinnamon color, and its paws are a dirty white; his mufle is small, naked, brown, and his nostrils are pierced; he has the mustache stiff and black, four fingers on the legs, nails strong and a rudimentary thumb; his tail is scaly and yet a little hairy; he is one foot long from the end of muzzle at the end of the tail and presents the appearance of a big rat, although the natives look at him like a species of rabbit: they have kept the name of parret gave him the negritos. This animal is rare; he feeds of roots and tames easily: M. P. de la Gironnière saw it in the mountains of Nueva-Ecija.

The shrew (sorex myosurus, Pak.) and the *vespertilio borbonicus*, species of bats, meet in the island of Luzon. The province of Bataan produces very small gazelles, deer and deer very small, resembling the Java cantchils, which are about the size of the rabbit.

Monkeys of different varieties are found everywhere: Mindanao in product of all whites that look like those of Sandacan in northeastern Borneo; Negros in gives blacks which I saw a beautiful subject carrying a tassel on the head. There are wild cats, a small species fox; the tagua or guiga, which is a species of flying cat; dogs, rats, and an animal called *mangou*, the main enemy of rats, which he pursues, even though be smaller than them.
Forests are the refuge of a large number of birds different species: first there are wild cocks, these small labuyos, but very courageous in combat, where they are always victorious when they are confronted fat and loose roosters of China, and often when they struggle against opponents such as those in the province of Laguna, so renowned for their value; many varieties pigeons, among which we can see that of Cebu, also named pigeon of the seven colors, which is of a size and of remarkable beauty and whose neck is adorned a collar; turtledoves green, black, gray, chocolate dark; still others whose chest offers a stain a bright red, resembling the mark that would have left a stab ; eagles, pelicans, egrets, wild ducks; small quail called *pogos*, snipe by the thousands. The falcon la Gironnière is the most little bird of prey that we know; he only has 16 centimeters long: the upper part of his body is black with green reflection, and the lower part is glossy white.

Jungles abound with 100 species of hummingbirds the most varied colors, catacouas (psiltacus cristatus), large and small green parrots, parakeets extremely small, rhinoceros-birds (calou buceros) who, earlier than the rooster, have often woken us

by their cry, when, lying in the hospitable hut of some Indian, we were only waiting for this signal for us put on a journey in the middle of deep solitudes where they usually fix their dwellings.

We will not forget to name the *alcyon salangane*, whose nest, so precious as analeptic, is so sought-after by the Chinese, that they pay for it by the weight of money. The islets and the isolated rocks of Bisaya, and especially those, which are part of the province of Calamianes, produce so abundantly, that they form one of the main articles, with pearls and gold powder, from the trade of the alkalde who governs it.

Fish abounds in the seas, lakes and rivers such that it is sufficient for the native to sit for a few moments to win his day, and it often happens that the father is content, in the morning, to enter the river flowing at the bottom of his little *bahay* or maisonette, to obtain a sufficient supply for the meal of all his family. We will mention, among many, those more particular to the country, such as the guitan, the corbina, the apajap, the lisse, the bagre, the bia, the jito, the bocadulces; the saramollettes, small exquisite fish. There are loubines, rays, soles, congers, a species of cod, sardines, sappers and many more or less useful. Besides all these fish, there is one of which the flesh is a very healthy food, and the most common among the natives is the *Dalac*: we find it abundantly in lakes, rivers, marshes and even, during the season rains, in the rice fields called *cimenteras*, word that some authors improperly rendered by cemeteries.

Among the crustaceans, large and small lobsters, crabs of all kinds, shrimps. We can not imagine the huge amount of small shrimp that fishing in the vicinity of Manila; the natives leave in heaps, for the sole purpose of making them rot, in order to sell them as fertilizer for betel plantations, to which they give a lot of spice and aroma.

The sea provides sharks whose black fins sell to the Chinese, pearl oysters, turtles with scales very beautiful, sea cucumbers or tripans and ambergris.

Oysters are still found in these areas: they are good and have no other fault than to be habitually the high temperature of the atmosphere. Mussels abound there. Some other bivalves, more esteemed in France, are delicious; they make up the ordinary lunch of the indios. However, we must be careful about these shells, which often cause the most serious accidents.

Before the conquest of the Philippines by the Spaniards, the inhabitants were feeding almost exclusively on fish, for fishing was their principal occupation; they ate it dry or fresh, in stew, mixed with some herbs and tamarind, which formed a dish called sinigan, which is still one of their greatest delights.

The caiman, which we see in bays, lakes, rivers, and especially in Lake Bay, loves the places isolated; he is very dangerous, and sometimes pursues bathers to the shore. They abound in crater lake from the mountain of the island, to which they gave their name, located near the mineral baths, on the shores of the lake from Bay. Indios are not afraid to dive until the bottom of the water to attack the caiman; they carry, of a hand, a sharp weapon and, on the other hand, a wooden stick hard, pointed at both ends; they seek it, then, seizing the moment he wants to engulf them, they introduce him, perpendicularly and forcefully? this stake in the mouth, that this obstacle keeps

open; then they hit him vigorously with his right hand, while the water he swallow is not slow in helping them to master it.

The snake named *dajoun palay*, that is to say that looks to a green leaf of rice, is thin, short and gives, as we say, almost instantly the death. We must admit that we have never seen this reptile, but we do not know if its existence is good noted: it would be the only venomous Ophidian who would live the Philippines; because we can not consider such as the species of boa called culebra casera, the piton and some others, which gave rise to so many exaggerations.

Leeches abound in streams and forests from the Philippines; they are largely sufficient for the needs of the medical service of these localities. There are several species of these annelids: the most remarkable are the small ones leeches; they attach themselves to the legs of the natives, and, hardly have they taken a few steps in the forests, that they see their blood flow, if they did not have the precaution, before to enter, to rub them with chewed tobacco.

Insects are as beautiful and varied as possible: it would already take a long nomenclature to to make known that the most interesting; they do not bear, in general, only indigenous names.

Mosquitoes swarm in Manila and in almost all the big pueblos, where one can not sleep without his mosquito net, which barely guarantees a host so inconvenient. Grasshoppers, which I saw thick clouds obscure the brightness of the day during the months of December, of January and February, devour in an instant the young shoots of rice, hope of the localities where they fall; they wear desolation everywhere: a bonus is granted for their destruction, and alkaloids are allowed to pay both by measure of these insects presented to them.

The white ant (termites), anay des Tagales, is the most formidable insects; she destroys the buildings she eat all the woods, except the mole, which is extremely hard, and the banava, which, moreover, is very bitter; she lives in family, lives mainly in humid places and forms, in the fields, burrows the height of a man and a solidity such that the buffaloes pass over without damaging them. Their dwelling is clay and presents inside cells separated by partitions, where they deposit myriads of excessively small white eggs. At the top of the anthill throne the insect that in the Philippines is called the queen of ants; she is not armed; its dimensions are huge when it's full, and its structure is so different from that of the other ants, that it would not be recognized not if we found her alone. These insects are built, with a mixture of mud and liquid that they secrete, covered paths that lead them safely to where they want to attack, where they are settling always end up destroying. The fir tree is the wood they devour with the most greed. Hot countries suit them preferably; but this plague has been, it is said, imported under our latitudes, and the port of Rochefort, it seems, is already infested. The coalter is the only remedy we have found for the destruction of such a formidable enemy.

We will finish this very imperfect picture of the animal kingdom in the Philippines recalling that there are seashells more beautiful and varied than in any other country.

CHAPTER X.
THE CITY OF MANILA AND ITS SURROUNDINGS.

Etymology of the name of Manila. - Submission of rajahs. – Foundation from the city.- Labezares hunts the Chinese privateer Limahon. - Conspiracy born discovered by Vera. - The governor Dasmarinas strengthens the city. Governor Vargas, after the departure of the English, increases the fortifications. - Streets and buildings. - Extent in population.- Character of the inhabitants.- Surroundings. - La Playa La Calzada - The Hermita.- Malate. - Swamps. - Santa Ana. - San Pedro Macati. - Paco. - Nuestro Sefior de Paco. - Cemetery. - The room of spectacle.- La Escolta .-- The cave of San Matheo. - Sampaloc. – The street of Rosario. -L'Alcaiceria. - Binondac. - Gagalanin.- Vitas. - Bancusay. - The Leprosarium. - Vinondo. - Nactajan. - the consul of France.- Cavity.-The island of Corregidor.- Galleras.- The Terlulias.- Newcomers to Manila.- Expenditure of first establishment. -Prices of consumer goods in Manila.

Manila, capital of the Philippine Islands, is located by At 44 ° 36 "north latitude and 118 ° 37 '30" east longitude from meridian of Paris. It is generally thought that she owes her name to a plant that grew abundantly in its surroundings and what the natives of the country call *Nilad* (Ixoramanila, Bl.), a word to which we would have added *ma*, syncope of *mayron*, which, in Tagal, means *there is*. This shrub was between mangroves which covered the beautiful beaches of the bay of Manila, as is still most of the periphery of the islands of this archipelago.

We reported above on the hostilities that took place place in 1569 between Miguel Lopez de Legaspi and the chiefs Indian people, as well as the resolution the governor Spanish to place his capital at the bottom of the beautiful bay from Manila.

He accordingly gave the natives the order to complete the fort at the entrance to the river, and work began May 19, 1571. The following June 24, they were quite advanced, and that same day, feast of St. Jean-Baptiste, the adelantado, Miguel Lopez de Legaspi, declared that this city should be regarded as the capital of the Philippines; he named two ordinary alcaldes, twelve regidores or members of the municipal council, an alguazil and a notary. He marked the place where was to be built the public square, assigned land for the convent of St. Augustine, and not only distributed, with the most great generosity, to all the Spaniards who had accompanied him, but he still wanted to build at his expense, on these lands, one hundred and fifty houses to house the new settlers; At the same time he sketched the plan of a church. All Legaspi's measures were marked in the corner of wisdom; it is this conduct which it would be proper to imitate when we start the foundation of a colony. Legaspi gave his new city the name of Manila (Manila), which the King of Spain approved by granting him the following coat of arms: "The shield of Manila represents a castle of argent in his upper half; in his lower half, a half-dolphin holding in his hand a sword and beating the sea from his tail.» Later adelantado ordered the construction of a palace for the government, a cathedral and a hundred and fifty other houses; we did not stop for that fortification works located at the tip of the river.

In August 1572, Legaspi was replaced in the government of these islands by the maestre de campo Don Guido de Labezares, it was he who gloriously expelled the corsair Chinese Limahon and the Japanese general Sioco who had seized from Manila, November 50, 1574. The new city suffered greatly on this occasion. A big hurricane

(vaguio) destroyed some time after part of his buildings, while many of his houses, slightly built of nipa, were consumed by fire. Labezares raised them and repaired the damage that the city had suffered.

Work started was vigorously continued by the fifth Governor Don Diego Ronquillo.

During the government of Dr. Don Santiago de Vera, the inhabitants of Borneo Island conspired with the Tagales, who lived in the province of Tondo, to hunt the Spaniards of the island. The governor discovered their conduct the year 1584; he chastised them and raised them for safety, in the future, the fortress of Nuestra Senora de Guia, which he crowned artillery fused by a pampango Indian.

In 1590, Gomez Perez Dasmarinas, seventh governor, surrounded the city with solid ramparts and built the Santiago fort at the tip of the river, where begins now the pier and where there had been until then only one wooden fort. It was he who built the cathedral, the shops of Manila and Cavity, Santa Potenciana, the puerta Parian and the puerta Real, on the beach, as well as several other buildings that still exist. He establishes a foundry of guns and died, treacherously murdered by Chinese who rowed in his falua (boat), during a trip that he was in Bisaya for the affairs of his administration. This unfortunate event happened in 1594, not far from the tip of Asupe.

Since that time, Manila has been suffering from cruel vicissitudes; earthquakes, so common in these islands, and fires, still more terrible, devastated her alternately. The tremor of 1645 destroyed a part of the buildings of the city that we had not taken yet the precaution of building as they are today, that is to say on pillars, from which extend across pieces of wood, which, as well as the roof, can play in all directions without being reversed. This system should be adopted in all countries subject to these great earthly convulsions. In the disaster of 1645, the house of education of Santa Potenciana collapsed, and twelve girls, who were raised at the expense of the State, perished under the rubble. On these ruins, the Maestranza de fortificaciones was built. It has been noted that these tremors often place at the same time as the great eruptions of volcanoes Mindanao, Àlbay and Bulusan; concussions that made the stone houses crumble never made than to rock those of nipa, raised on their incorruptible arrigues. It is claimed to have seen the light ashes launched by the volcanoes of Mindanao come down on Manila, which is more than 200 leagues distant.

The invasion of the English was a useful lesson for the government from the city; and, as, moreover, the English had left it in bad shape, the governor Don José Basco y Vargas restores not only the fortifications the place, but still put it in a position to support, during long enough, a seat in good standing, as long as it was well defended. Manila now has two strong bastioned forts, with very wide ditches and counter-ditches, and bridges; it is, moreover, defended, on one side, by the sea, and, on the other, by the river which bathes the walls. The fort Santiago still covers it on the side of the river, of which it keep the mouth. La Galera protects her from Malate's side and Hermita, while an advanced work, placed at the end mole, defends this bastion against the enfilade of the bay. The city still has wells, full tanks of water in all seasons, food stores, an arsenal, a powder magazine: its shape is that of a pentagon irregular. A stone bridge, located outside the Parían gate, which is also very well defended, ensures communication with Binondo and the suburbs.

The streets of Manila are fired, and most of them are not paved, which makes them almost impassable in the rainy season: these streets, always filled with a crowd of cars of different species and indios on foot who cross in all directions, lead to the public square, large quadrangle in the center of which there has a bronze statue of King Charles IV. This is where, two times a week, as well as holidays, the society of Manila meets in the evening to hear the music of the regiments.

The main buildings of the city are the cathedral, the archbishop's palace and that of the government, which are extremely simple; the ayuntamiento or municipality, which is a very beautiful building; ten churches belonging to various religious orders, but which are open to the public; from the convents of Dominicans, Augustinians, Recollects, Franciscans; several convents of women and beaterios, species of beguinages; an arsenal, three colleges of men, two houses of education for women, a supreme court, a prison, a civil hospital, a law school, so-called University of St. Thomas, from which emerge very distinguished subjects who practice the profession of lawyer in the colony; flying schools, mathematics, languages; finally a customs hotel and barracks.

Manila is lit up in the evening by numerous lamps, but still leave much to be desired in terms of of the light they provide. While she presents, from remain, the aspect of a capital; nevertheless the city properly said, whose circumference is 4,166 vares or 5,624 meters, and its length, from S.Sc. to N.O., of 744 vares or 647 meters, has hardly more than 12 to 15,000 inhabitants; but it is surrounded by a large number of pueblos or villages that are like the suburbs, and, when including these villages, its population rises to over 140,000 souls. Indeed, many of them, such as Malate, Santa Cruz, San Fernando, Binondoc, Tondo, Guiapo, San Sebastian, San Miguel, San Anton and Sampaloc can be regarded as part of the city, since they touch or are only separated by a very short space. The gates of the city are closed at eleven o'clock evening, only to reopen at five in the morning, unless extraordinary circumstances. In this interval, the streets are deserted and we hear only the cries of alerta (which is vibrant), as in the surrounding villages, the doorbell of the vigilant Bantay.

The kindness and cordiality of the inhabitants of Manila would the most pleasant stay in the world, if there were this jealousy and slander that we find, without exception, in all small towns. The ladies of the country, especially the girls of Spaniards, are good and amiable; there is in the number, which are very pretty: the Spaniards they do not appreciate them as much as they deserve, though balls and meetings, and the ease with which one is, in general, received in the interior of the houses, provide all the opportunities that one may desire to know their affability. They usually love the adornment and display a great luxury of diamonds and silks, especially upon the arrival of a new Governor General. The surroundings of Manila are delicious and very picturesque; they offer an aspect, a life, a world and languages new for the European who arrives for the first time times in the country. He sees himself surrounded by Chinese, Tagalocs, of Bisayas, Pampangos, Ilocos, Cagayans, Filipinos, Spanish, and some foreign traders. Each of the natives expresses himself in an idiom which is particular, although all of them enclose a kind of corrupt Spanish.

Going out the door of Santa Lucia, we arrive at the Playa (the beach), evening walk where we will breathe the cool and admire the magnificence of a sunset in the tropics,

whose last rays are reflected on the island of Corregidor and on the Marivelès mountains, which stand out at the bottom of the immense bay. We continue to follow the strike that run through a crowd of elegant cars, and especially the so-called birlochos (four-wheeled cabriolet wheels) that are being built in Manila, but that is also come from Batavia, from London; and even from the United States. All the world has its birlocho, at the bottom of which one extends, one chewing betel, the other smoking his cigar, which some ladies themselves do not blame themselves.

What is this sudden sound of bells, followed by a silence more suddenly again? it's the Angelus. At the moment, conversations are interrupted, the worker holds his hammer suspended, cars and riders stop; we do not hear that the whisperings of the prayers recited in a low voice and that follow by far the fanfares of the trumpets and the rolling drums. After a few minutes, the movement again, friends greet each other in passing and wish a good night (buenas noches). Then leaving behind you a long trail of dust, each birlocho goes to either the owner's home or to that of an acquaintance, to savor the chicara of Castilian chocolate, Cebu cocoa and Mariquina milk, with Pampanga cookies, or tea brought from Chincheo by the Chinese shampan adorned with two big eyes to the bow. All these birlochos are harnessed with two horses, except the cars of the governor and the archbishop, that have four.

Charming city! enchanting stay! at home, kindness cordiality, gentleness, frankness and noble hospitality, the friendly abandonment, the sincere generosity make the house from your neighbor your own house; at home, the difference ranks and fortunes disappear, the icy was label is unknown. 0 Manila, for you will be my last thought!

When we have doubled the tip of San Gregorio, we enter in the Calzada, which we follow between the wide moats and the plains of Bagombayan, where is the Polygon. A path lined with trees that form two curtains of greenery leads to the village of L'Hermita, located at 540 vares (470 meters) from the city. This village is almost identical with that of Malate, inhabited by the most skillful embroiderers in pina and sinamay, by painters in different genres and by fishermen of the bay. Malate leads to the Salinas, which precede the fort and an infantry barracks. This path is also that of Pasay, a village where betel is grown and which is besides, dreaded for the thieves he conceals; he is on the Cavite road. Near the small fort San Antonio Abad, we find a powder magazine. Taking a left, we meet marshes, by which we could easily, in times of war, flood all around Manila, and it seems that the project actually existed, because from this place to Vitas, on the other side of the river, we still see some works in bad condition and all the clues of the plane of a strategic line, that would be, indeed, easy to keep, thanks to the many rivers whose campaign is watered.

Leaving Pasay aside, we go to Santa Ana, which is three quarters of a league from Manila. It's a delicious place, on the edge of the Pasig, where we will breathe fresh in the beautiful season. San Pedro Macati is half a league away further than Santa Ana. The air of this village is pure and alive: it is there that the convalescent dyssenteric will resume forces. By getting closer to Manila, we arrive in Paco, also called San Fernando de Dilao, big inhabited village by painters artists, painters in buildings, bricklayers and roofers: its church enjoys high reverence in the country because it encloses, in a magnificent socket, a recumbent image, representing Our Lord after the descent of the cross; it is known as name of Nuestro Senor de Paco, and the inhabitants attribute to him many miracles.

Continuing to return to the city, we go found in the middle of the walkers. Sometimes we see to rise a cloud of dust; it's the guard that precedes the Governor's car. We exclaim: *Para*, coachman (stop, coach)! We stop and greet His Excellency. A little further on we hear a bell ring; it's Paco's thst salutes the archbishop; for when His greatness comes out, the bells are set in motion in all the churches before which he passes. It's a salute that responds to the one that the governor is returned to the fields its passage.

We arrive then at the cemetery, remarkable by its pretty circular structure, its garden and its beautiful little church which contains the tombs of bishops and governors. The poor Indian is deposited in the cemetery land and the rich castila in a nicho practiced in the wall, whose the thickness is 7 to 8 feet. These niches belong to families who buy them.

It's following a tree alley that goes from the Flood at the Balete canal, we find ourselves at La Calzada, leaving on the right the bastion of San Carlos and crossing the Arroceros Estero, a small stream that, along with the canal, could to serve, if necessary, to flood all this territory; a lock, with a small fortified bridge, forms the communication ditches of the city with the Pasig River. The room of show, which is only a box in front of which we pass after that, is remarkable in that, despite its greatness, it is built only of bamboo and nipa. Similarly that in all houses of this kind, he enters no metal nor any nail in its construction; ankles in Bamboo and rattan fasteners are used. Stopped again by the bridge, we find on the right a pretty square, well planted with trees, furnished with benches and lighted the evening; there we can go, feast days, hear a second once the music after its release from the city; a barracks infantry borders the river.

When we cross the bridge, we see how to extend, to the right and to left, the street called la Escolta, with its shops where the Macao, Canton, and Chincheo grouts have become merchants novelties, paintings, perfumeries, objects from Europe, America, Asia; others practice trades carpenters, tailors, shoemakers; more besides, whose origin seems to be more pronounced, trade in sugar, indigo, rice, nests of salanganes, sea cucumbers, fin sharks, fine pearls, turtle scales, mother-of-pearl; nevertheless these latter objects, as well as goods from China, are more the responsibility of the Chinese and Métis traders from Tondo.

La Escolta, well lit at night by glass globes, is the rendezvous of all the idle people of Manila; it's at the corner of bridge, at .loaquin the Chinese, one of the most successful merchants rich and the busiest, who we go to learn the news of the day, true or not: from there we can observe all those who pass on the bridge, especially when it is clear of the moon, while the birloches to couples in love and the cavalcades cross each other in all directions; riders and ladies exchange, by the way, words of interest, while the elegant mestizos, their rivals, proudly pass by of them, driven by the rapid race of their light sponges.

After the Escolta et leaving the city, we find Quiapo, San Sebastian, San Miguel, San Anton and Sampaloc, as well Nactajan, where our Consul General, Mr. Adolphe Barrot, lived in a beautiful house. The official's stay left to Manila the most honorable memories. Leaving Nactajan, we arrive at the Loma promenade more insulated, which

leads to the Balsa, bamboo bin placed on the river and that we move with the help of a huge rattan liana; we go there to get from Mariquina in Pasig or San Matheo Cave.

Sampaloc has always been a favorite place for us and the theater of our field work. There we planted thousands of mulberry mulberry trees, which we shipped at the King's Garden in Paris, cuttings enclosed by a new process, in the fresh trunk of the banana tree. There we have studied the culture and made tests on the manufacture of the tobacco; there we have engaged in many experiments on the gagamba spider we named Epeira flute maculata, from which we obtained a very beautiful silk, of which we have deposited samples at Garden of plants. It would be very desirable to introduce this insected in our colonies, where it will replace perhaps advantageously the silkworm. There, in the silence of the cabinet, we have brought together all the manufactured products of Philippines, that we compare to those of our homeland, to offer the results to the commerce of France. The finally, we have collected all the notes, all the details that we could get on customs, laws, administration of the Philippines, details which should have day to serve us in the composition of this work.

So far we have taken, with the reader, the right from the Manila Bridge; but the street of Escolta also extends to the left, still occupied by Chinese doing the same trade as the other side. Then come the Bivouac, San Gabriel Square: Enluague or the Rue des Maçons on the one hand; on the other, the street of Rosario, all merchant and stocked with small but rich shops held by trades, also lead first at the tobacco factory, whose sound is heard from afar: then to San Fernando, to Alcaiceria, where the shampans the Chinese land their goods and from where, according to royal orders, all the Chinese who arrive in the countries, as formerly the Japanese, were to be dispersed in the countryside to cultivate the land; but these ordinances are not observed. The main street of Santo Christo is occupied by Chinese grocers and merchants drugstores of all kinds; by pharmacies Chinese and gambling houses. Misit, located to the right, in a island, is the beautiful barracks of Luzon dragons. The place burned called Tondo Division, village of weavers and fishermen, is the garden of Manila; of the product of its vegetable gardens and its orchards, it provides the mango markets, of common oranges and mandarins, bananas and other fruits of all kinds. Gagalanin is no less famous than Tondo for its oranges, and it also provides cow's milk and buffalo; we go there in the morning and evening, on horseback or in car, to take this hot milk. In Vitas, we enter in a shady transom road of magnificent and Huge bunches of bamboos, the most poetic plant that produce the soil of the tropics. This path leads to Bancusay, last home of the Chinese, whose tombs will be give some idea of their cemeteries to people who did not see those of Macao and Canton. We arrive then at the leprosarium, a vast building that can be seen on the right, shaded by tall green trees and surrounded by rice paddies depend on it. This is where the unfortunate lepers are relegated far from the world, which hates them. Upon arrival at Manila, we were instructed to serve this hospital, receptacle of all the most hideous diseases whose nature afflicts poor humanity. We did not delay a singular observation; it is that the unfortunate elephantiacs stubbornly refuse the help of art and that the most devoted doctor offers in vain his care to their disgusting, but curious affection. Elephantiasis, fire St. Anthony, scrofula, amorphous diseases, syphilides, scabies, raspberry, yaws, dry bubas and wet, everything is confused in this horrible enclosure, that the doctor alone has the courage to visit, but Pious Recollects make it their duty to console and the sad inhabitants. A cross rises above this silent retreat, vast tomb of living beings only a few charitable souls attend and relieve in their misfortune.

We made in this hospital some observations worthy of being collected. This is how two elephantiacs we have seen healthy children born, and we have were aware of clandestine not had any unfortunate results, while in the center of the white population of Manila and in distinguished families, some cases, rare indeed, seem to militate in favor contagion.

The tour we just had the reader make took two evenings, notwithstanding the vigor of our little horses; we cross after that, with remarkable speed, the opposite end of Binondoc, a place full of Chinese, native and industrious mestizos; they are confectioners, oil and soap dealers, jewelers, painters, goldsmiths, enamel; they hold gambling houses and pansiterias, kind of bistros where we eat dupansit, mets Chinese who love the niñas (girls) of Manila. In coming out of this pueblo, we arrive at the square del Corregimiento from Tondo, and we go from there to Nactajon savor tea, the real tea of China, which is offered to us by friendship with the Consul General of France, whose reception is so frank, so cordial, so French humor and the billiards so perfect. He had a splendid table, no stranger passing through Manila was excluded; in a word, he showed himself the worthy representative of his country. His immense works on China, Sincapur, Batavia and Manila do not leave very little to do after him, for he has harvested everything.

Not far from the beautiful walks that we come from describe, a mother branch of the Pasig receives small rivers of Tondo, San Sebastian, Sampaloc, San Juan del Monte, Pasay, Santa Ana and Paco, which water the environs of Manila and fertilize the soil already so fruitful. Small bridges are thrown on all these rivers, where the inhabitants of the houses bordering their banks are going bathe and whose fish is used on their tables.

We spoke only very lightly of Cavity, port located in Manila Bay, about 4 miles southwest of his anchorage, and which acquires interest during a monsoons of the year; it takes its name from the word tagale cauit, which means hook, little handle, because that is actually the configuration of its port. Cavity is the cheflieu of the province of that name, which is important, though of a small extent. The city is fortified, it has a governor appointed by the Spanish Government, which is same time corregidor of the province. His garrison is composed a militia regiment commanded by a colonel; she has a lieutenant of justice in charge of collecting the tribute; a galley, a hospital, a church, a convent, an arsenal, sites where were built naos or galleons who traveled to Acapulco and San Blas. We see again, in this port, the remains of one of these galleons; his waters, as well as the whole bay, teeming with sharks. The Cavite telegraph communicates with the island of Corregidor, located at the entrance to the bay, and which is commanded by a officer having under his command a weak detachment of soldiers, with some small pieces of cannon. This island serves as station with four falúas or rowboats that will recognize the ships, reported 24 miles away, by the look-out of the Corregidor placed at the top of the mountain. We built, a few years ago, in the Cavite shipyards, the San Fernando, 44-gun frigate.

Apart from a few indigenous theaters bamboo, where we play pieces in the language of still found, for the use of the natives and the Chinese, in the around Manila, galleras or cockfights, which are rented by the government to contractors, some playhouses,

opium smokers, even though they are prohibited, from estanquillos of tobacco and coconut wine.

The doctor pays 4 dollars per day visit and 4 piastres by night visit, childbirth from 40 to 50, and exits at 1 kilometer 16 piastres.

The mail goes once a week for different provinces of Luzon; that of Cavite, every day.

Visits are usually made in the evening after the walk, when the breeze has already refreshed the atmosphere. Each house holds his tertulia, where we talk about news of the day, and it is rare for politics to darken hobbies. There, in each living room, two rows of chairs to arms are placed in battle and extend from the balcony to the door, a place that is recognized as the freshest of the House. On one of the ranks are the señoritas and on the other, opposite, the cavalleros. We question the new come (who must then be on guard); we judge them the first day; it is often done in cancellations and sometimes of music because there is no house where there is or a piano or harp. The latter is the favorite instrument the mestizo and the guitar that of the indio.

There is, so to speak, no hotel, and everyone makes a pleasure to receive compatriots and even often foreigners; however first-time expenses, though small, are far too heavy for most of the employees that the government sends the Peninsula; they should be better paid. In addition to first acquisition costs of linen in white cotton and in canvas from China (grass-cloih) or from Europe, which is missing always to the arrivals, because in Manila we must have them by the hundreds, you have to think about the car, the horses, the domestic servants who are indispensable, could we find better to go on foot;

It will not be indifferent to publicize the price of main consumer goods in Manila, so that the The reader can evaluate the expenses that are made there. We will begin by the most expensive acquisitions.

A saddle horse is worth 120 to	330 f.
A carriage, from 1,500 to. . . .	1,600
A pram, from 2,000 to. . . .	2,500
A team of two horses, from 100	350
Their food	33
Coach's wages	25
of the servant	15
of the cook.	25
Average house from 150 to.	200 per month
Laundering per person. . .	10

Moving on to the objects necessary for animal life, which are in no way encumbered by the grant rights unknown to the Philippines, we will quote

Bread	25
White biscuit	35/kg
Biscuit of sea (variable, but expensive).	-
Wine of Val de Peñas (good)	-
Jerez sec.	-

Malaga .. 2	30
Mullet (fish)	50
Dalag (big black fish). . . .	50
Kid (for a dish). . . .	30
Oysters and shells.	25
Beef meat	70/kg
Meat of pork.	90
Tapa de cerf, offers himself as gifts.	-
from Vaca machorra, id.	-
A beautiful hen. 1	25
Chiken..... 40	40
Eggs. . . . . 50 dozen.	50/doz.
A turkey	5
Duck	50
A pair of pigeons	90
Snipe (two).	4
Pogos	50/doz.
Wild ducks of the Laguna. . .	50
Chickpeas from Spain ...	501s 6 kil.
A cabbage from China. . . .	50
a salad	45
Peas (for a dish). . . .	50
Big beans patani (id.)	50
Potatoes from China (variable).	
Sweet potatoes	16/doz.
Tomatoes (large)	25 id.
European ham.	50
from China.	75
Cervelas from Spain (chorizo)	45
Bacon 1	50/kg.
Pork fat.	10 id.
Olive oil from France. . . .-. .	5
coconut (for lighting). .	42/liter
Firewood (a carreton). . .	55
Attes, from five to a dozen.	
Mangoes (excellent), from 5 to. .	50
Pineapple c. ..	50
Oranges from Manila 1	50
from China	50
White sugar.	40/kg.
Milk 25 the bottle.	
jams 90 kilograms.	
Pastries (cheap).	
Chocolate	450 oz.

.

Cheese from Gruyères, Holland, olives and others articles from Europe, as well as canned goods, including traders French import a large quantity, are expensive to Manila; but, in compensation, there is tea, coffee, cinnamon, spices and other colonial commodities at very low prices.

We would have liked to give, with their prices, a description furniture of a house, which is ordinarily Made in Manila or in some of the villages of the Laguna; but we would fear, even though it relates to it some interest, to make us too prolix.

CHAPTER XI
GEOGRAPHY OF THE PROVINCES.

Tondo. - Bulacan.- Bataan. - Pampanga. - Zambales. – Pangasinan.- Ilocos south and north.

We have already said in Chapter V that the archipelago of the Philippines was divided by the very nature of the country and the position of the islands, in two distinct parts, one of which could to be called Luçonie and the other the Bisaye, forming together thirty-three provinces. We will add to them again Mariana Islands, which depend on this archipelago, although they far from it.

After describing, in the previous chapters, the geography general of the Philippines and its capital, we are going now go into more detailed details about each of the provinces in particular, and we'll start by those who form Luzon. They are in number nineteen, namely: Tondo, Bulacan, Bataan, Pampanga, Zambales, Pangasinan, Ilocos-South, Ilocos-North, Nova Province, Cagayan, Nueva-Ecija, Nueva-Biscaya, Cavity, the Laguna, Batangas, Tayabas, Camerines-north, Camerinessud and Albay.

PROVINCE OF TONDO.

This province, though one of the smallest, is however, one of the richest, most industrious, more populated, in a nutshell, one of the most important of all the archipelago. It is bounded on the north by Bulacan and Nueva Ecija; in the east by Nueva Ecija; to the south, by the Laguna and Bay Lake; to the west, by Cavity and the bottom of Manila Bay. Its circumference is about 28 leagues.

Tondo consists of twenty-seven pueblos, word of which he is rather difficult to indicate the true meaning; he can to hear, according to the occasion, a city, a village, a village, parish or any meeting of inhabitants under the same local administration: the twenty-seven Pueblos of the province of Tondo are:

		Ce qui, multiplié par 5, donne
Tondo, chef-lieu, contient	3,498 tributos,	17,490 hab.
Binondo et San José. . .	4,175	20,875
Tambobong et Nabotas. .	6,444 ½	32,223
Caloacan.	1,224 ½	6,122
Santa Cruz.	1,950	9,759
Quiapo.	1,005	5,025
Sampaloc.	1,374	6,870
Mariquina.	1,499	7,495
San Matheo.	1,101	5,505
Antipolo.	520	2,600
Taytay.	1,162	5,810
Cainta.	466	2,330
Pasig	3,288	16,440
San Miguel.	661	3,305
Paco.	1,300	6,500
Hermita.	1,861	9,305
Malate et Pasay.	1,994	9,970
Parañaque et Malibay. . .	2,196	10,980
Santa Ana.	1,399	6,995
Macati.	743	3,715
Pateros.	1,190	5,950
Taguiig.	1,683 ½	8,418
Bosoboso.	123	615
Laspiñas.	677	3,385
Pandacan.	924 ½	4,622
Muntinlupa.	442	2,210
Payatas.	87	435
		215,640

We have seen previously that the evaluation of the population, by means of the tribute, can not be regarded as because of the various classes of people who are free. We repeat this observation because the above figure will not fail to appear too weak, applied to a province that we said was one of more flourishing and more populous throughout the archipelago.

Tondo, capital of the province of this name, has almost all its houses built of canes, bamboos and nipa; there are a small number of stones, but that make rather part of the pueblo of Binondo, residence of the alcalde or corregidor of the province. We will make known, in the chapter of the civil administration, the attributions of this official and those subordinate to him.

This pueblo, as well as all those who are located in the environs of Manila, a plague of mestizos and Chinese; and they There are so many, that not only almost all the trade retail but still some of the top trade is in their hands. A small number of Spanish houses and foreigners dispute only the possession of this last; do they still use these two classes of inhabitants as a kind of agents, to whom they grant more or less considerable credits.

Tondo is home to carpet factories, sayas and handkerchiefs of cotton and silk, sinamays, guinaras, piña and cotton fabrics. Fishing, which is the main occupation of the inhabitants, provides them with a considerable quantity molluscs and oysters, the scales of which to make lime. The shops are, in general, held by Métis women who get along very well this kind of trade.

The pueblo de Tondo contains a remarkable church. Among the stone houses, one can mention that lives the Indian painter Damian, who, full of genius and enthusiasm for his art, worked with so much zeal and he became, in a very short time, an artist really distinguished, and of which we have seen that we would not have expected to meet in his workshop.

Tondo was more than once devastated by fires the sea breeze increased activity.

Binondo touches Tondo; he is separated from Manila by the Pasig and communicates with the capital by a stone bridge of 149 vares long; it also extends, on the edge of the bay, to the so-called Tondo Division; he is bounded, on the east, by the pueblo de Santa Cruz, and, on the south, by the Pasig.

The Binondo River, also known as the Tondo River, is divides into several arms: it is through her that one goes in the provinces of Bulacan and Pampanga. Its width is from 14 to 20 fathoms, and it is almost everywhere navigable for cascos. It is through it that we bring daily in Manila all the objects that are used for consumption inhabitants.

Santa Cruz, located not far from the banks of the Pasig, follows Binondo, from which she is separated by the river carrying her name and which flows into the Pasig: we have described this village speaking of the environs of Manila. We talked also from those of Quiapo, San Sebastian, San Miguel, San Antonio and Sampaloc, which are successively leaving Santa Cruz; then Hermita and Malate. We will not repeat what we have said of Paco, Santa Ana, San Pedro Macati; but we will say a word about Pateros,

the village with ducks that are innumerable, and it has been claimed that their eggs were hatched by indios. The fact is that we raise them with care, and it is very curious to see them all return in the evening in their little huts, where they find sosso, small seashell, which is deliberately fished for their food; they are very fond of it, and it is assured that its use their spawn more abundant.

The Pueblo de Pasig is remarkable for its beautiful church and by a little convent of young girls. One of his neighborhoods contains a very singular population. Everything seems to indicate that she is foreign to the country; she lives isolated and does not communicate very rarely with the rest of the inhabitants: the skin color is the only trait of resemblance she offer with the indios. Moreover, these foreigners have the physiognomy beautiful, aquiline nose and beard; they have big with Malabares, and this is what made us think that they may have been descendants of the Sepoys who remained in the island after the retreat of the English, in 1763; but in this case, where did their women come from?

The pueblo of Pateros, of which we have just spoken, as well as that Muntinlupa, Taytay, Cainta, are located on the road which leads to Antipolo, famous pilgrimage where thousands of On the first Tuesday of May, the faithful go to bring their offering to Our Lady of Pais and Bon Voyage, called the Virgin of Antipolo. The chapel dedicated to him rises in an enchanting site in the middle of the mountains and forests, from which one discovers the views more admirable. The procession taking place at this festival rivals, by the pump that is deployed there, with the most beautiful ceremonies of this kind in Europe; it has a character particular, because of the large number of Chinese who attend. There is an iron mine in Antipolo.

Pandacan is a rich village, located in an island, on the Pasig. This is where the fodder comes from which we feed the Manila horses; it consists of a fresh grass that it's called sacale. On the shore in front of the island is located the powder shop. The big village of Mariquina has mineral waters; a lot of rice is grown there, in vast plains that extend to the horizon bordered by mountains. In San Mateo, we see a remarkable cave that the travelers will visit. Near Bosoboso lies the hermitage of Saint Nicholas, where the Chinese built a chapel, following the miracle of the petrified crocodile that one still sees on the bank of the Pasig. The Chinese go, every years, do a novena in this chapel.

All the mountains that surround this province are covered with forests, rich in timber and inhabited by wild boars, deer and birds of the species the most remarkable. In these mountains, we also harvest rice, which is called dry or dry rice, and whose quality is much more esteemed than that of lowland rice. The province of Tondo produces sugar in small quantities, many fruits, such as mangos, bananas, snags, pineapple, oranges. Livestock are raised there; it contains good pastures, and the mulberry mulberry grows in abundance; its industry is agricultural and manufacturing; it makes an extensive trade of all productions of the Philippines. This province is, moreover, the only one where it is allowed foreign traders to establish themselves.

The climate in Tondo is warm and humid.

PROVINCE OF BULACAN.

This province is also one of the smallest; but it is, without a doubt, the richest, the best cultivated, the most more laughing and healthiest of all the archipelago; she has the same about the same as that of Tondo, which, with one from the bay, the boundary marker to the south; to the west and north she has the province of Pampanga, and that of Nueva-Ecija to the east: its length is about 11 leagues by 6 wide. It's just as it has been nicknamed the garden of the Philippines. Regardless the fertility of his soil, his air is so pure, convalescents go there to recover the forces that they lost. Most of his pueblos, who are at number of nineteen, are located a short distance from the bay from Manila, with which they communicate by rivers so many in this province, that at the time of the rains we do not distinguish them from each other. They are lined of mangroves, whose trunks are used by the natives to make oars, and that they also use as fuel. They cover their houses with the leaves of other trees, which they call nipa, with whose sap they make brandy, vinegar and even sugar. Here are the names of pueblos and their population:

Bulacan..	1,960 ½ tributos,	9,803 hab.
Malolos.	6,162 ⅓	30,812
Paombong.	939	4,695
Hagonoy.	2,986	14,933
Calumpit.	1,900	9,500
San Isidro.	1,433	7,165
Quiñgua.	1,693	8,465
Balinag.	3,894	19,470
San Rafaël.	1,680	8,400
Angat.	2,207 ⅓	11,037
Guigiunto..	945	4,725
Bigaa..	1,229	6,145
Bocaue.	1,738	8,690
Pandi.	1,207	6,035
San José.	353	1,765
Marilao.	693	3,465
Meycauayan.	1,575	7,875
Polo..	1,696	8,480
Obando..	1,509 ⅓	7,548
		179,008

Bulacan, capital of the province; and headquarters of the alcalde mayor, is about 5 leagues from Manila and communicates with this capital by beautiful paths (calzadas), so it only takes two and a half hours to get there by land: we put five hours by water down the river which flows into the bay. The streets of this pueblo are very spacious and drawn with a line; but the houses that border are part in nipa and bamboo, part in wood and nipa. The church, the house of the alcalde and that of the administration are in stone. Among the inhabitants of Bulacan, there are many wealthy mestizos who own factories, sugar and who engage in trade. Another part of the population makes different fabrics, such as silk *tapis* and sayas. There is a large stone bridge of five arches, thrown on the lagoon (estero) of Matungao, and a another, of a single arch, on that of Mancancol. Bulacan is 1 and a half leagues from Malolos and half a league from Guiguinto.

The surroundings of Bulacan are extremely pleasant and very picturesque, as well as those of all the pueblos of province, which can be traveled one after the other without never have to go through the same twice, and from where we go to all the villages of the interior. Though number of them, such as Paombong and Hagonoy, who are almost always flooded, the roads through which they communicate with each other are practicable even in the rainy season. The air is beautifully pure in all this province, which, together with the beauty and variety of landscapes, made him give the garden name of the Philippines.

Several rivers water the province of Bulacan; the more important is that of Quiñgua, whose water is crystal clear and sweet; it goes through the pueblos of Angat, San Rafael, Balinag, Quiñgua, San Isidro and Caluriipit; it then flows into the river Pampanga, comes out, Hagonoy bathes and gets lost in the mangroves. The edges of these rivers are very fertile and covered with trees.

A vast lake, very full of fish in the wet season, evaporates almost entirely in the dry season and transforms into a huge meadow, rich in vegetation lush and covered with flocks of all kinds. The Pinac de Hagonoy becomes a lake by the junction of the waters of the Pampanga, but less considerable than that of Cadava, who has a course of 8 leagues, from Balatong to San Isidro, above Gapan, during which he picks up the waters of Santa Garla, Apig, Maasim, etc., and it is when these rivers dry up that we find, at background, innumerable quantities of dalags, candoles, hitos, that one kills with sticks. Near the mouth, we take an infinity of dirty sea fish and shells that form part of the food of the inhabitants and at the same time, the wealth of the country; the water of a of these lakes is salty, and communicates, to the quackgrass that comes on its banks, a taste that is repugnant to animals and prevents from eating. The river Pampanga, which we spoke above, after having received several affluents, throws himself into the Manila hedge by a large number of mouths, many of which are navigable and form as many small ports.

It is in the hollows that the mountains of this province of these little known swallows by naturalists under the name of salanganes and whose nest is so sought after; the natives of the country call it *balinsasayao*.

The native products of Bulacan and those of its industry are very numerous; we will try to give one idea.

Rice is grown first; then the corn, the coconut, which provides the oil to burn, the nipa (nipa littoralis, BL), sugar cane, indigo that is made both in paste and liquid, a little cocoa, coffee as good as that of Mocha and of the same quality as that of Indan and Silang in the province of Cavité. The culture of this bean goes back at the year 1793, when Manuel Piñón, alkalde of the province, ordered that each inhabitant plant a few feet of coffee and appointed commissioners to oversee the execution this measure; but she was neglected ever since, because the barriers that had been put on the requests.

Mulberry trees surround all the houses, but we draw no profit.

The chilli is not plentiful enough to make it worth to talk about it: cotton is more important, as is the ginger, sweet potato and especially castor oil, called, in the country, tangantangan, from which one draws the oil that one employs in medicine and which is also used for lighting.

The sibucao or campeche wood is used for dyeing; the galore is a liana which, cut in pieces and reduced into filaments by crushing, provides in the water a foam that has the property of soap; the indios use it to rush gold to separate it from the sand. The nito (ugena, Bl.) is another *liana* (rattan) that grows among the trees, a species of holly that we divide easily in its length and which we make hats, cigarreras (petacas) or cigar bags, and baskets very pretty and strong. A third species of *liana*, which is called bejuco, fills the mountains; it is a small rattan covered with thorns which is removed from the envelope outside so that what remains is smooth; it serves a crowd basketry and also to make hats.

Tobacco grows in the lowlands, near the river Quingua. Leroucouyer abounds in the province, which produces a large number of unclassified medicinal plants.

In the forests of Àngat, considerable cuts are made timber of different species, which stand out, in the country, by particular names, but to which the naturalists have not yet given it. It is there also the ebony that locals call *bolong aeta*, the sandal and several trees that provide gums, resins, varnish and incense.

The wax and honey are of excellent quality because the country is enamelled with flowers of all kinds.

Forests are inhabited by wild pigs, oxen, buffaloes, wild horses, a wide variety of birds and, among others, wild roosters and turtledoves.

As for the mineral kingdom, the surroundings of the village of Angat possess iron mines, magnet, quarries of piedra cuadra which we will discuss below. The iron that we from the Sampang-Bacal Mine is as good as that of Biscay in Spain. These mines are inexhaustible and located on the ground; there are some who give up to 90 percent, and one assures that all the mountains, from the mount Caravallo de Cagayan to the mountains of San Mateo and Antipolo, contain more or less ore. We we found in Antipolo and Jalajala which also contained white rosacea, and claims to have encountered copper. There are coal mines near the iron mines.

The rural poor find part of their livelihood by washing the gold sands. The rivers roll

huge masses of alabaster, some of which have 10 high varieties; they formed, near Punriig, a vast and unique cave, whose stalactites are admired by all who visit them. The province of Bulàcan is missing nor lime, building stone, flint, and it is said that there are also amethysts, topazes and emeralds. Casalat provides excellent slates but exploitation is not organized.

The industry is very advanced in this province: its relations with Manila, both by sea and by land, make it easier Development. The inhabitants of the coasts indulge in the peach; there are about 1500 trades in the province weaving machines, on which striped fabrics of silk and cotton, carpets, cambayas, synamay. The shops are mainly held by women. Of remain, Bulacan contains a large number of beggars; it is not that they lacked work if they wanted to search, but it seems that in the lower people, he There are many lazy and indolent people.

PROVINCE OF BATAAN.

This province, which is very small, is located west of Manila; it consists of a peninsula that forms the whole west side of the bay, and is bounded on the north by the province from Zambales, to the south by the small entrance to the bay, and, to the west, by the China Sea.

Despite its advantageous position, the Bataan does not contain only ten pueblos, to know:

Balañga.	1,571 tributos,	6,855 hab.
Abucay.	1,140	5,700
Samal.	607	3,035
Orani.	898	4,490
Hermosa.	459	2,295
Dinalupijan.	268	1,340
Pilar.	652	3,260
Orion.	1,107	5,535
Marivelès.	379	1,895
Morong.	521	2,605
		37,010

Balañga, capital of the province, is the residence of the alkalde mayor; this pueblo is located on the edge of a small river, inland. The air passes to be there very healthy and very good water.

The Bataan is poor and little cultivated; however, he produces the best sugar in the Philippines, very good indigo, but hardly enough rice for the consumption of the inhabitants, who are often even compelled to draw from neighboring provinces; the land is frequently flooded and the roads impracticable in the rainy season.

The shallow rivers can only receive the boats called cascos, and those same ones at high tide only; however, that of Oranie is 2 to 3 fathoms. All are very rich in fish and provide sustenance from most of the surrounding pueblos.

Very high mountains pass through this province and, among the highest, there is the Sierra de Marivelès, that one can see from far away at sea when one arrives, and which serves as an indication to the buildings that want to take the entrance to Subie Bay. These mountains provide huge blocks of marble of the most remarkable colors and which we used to adorn the churches of Manila, particularly that of St. Augustine. There is also of jasper. It is claimed that a Portuguese, named Cuimbra, recognized diamonds.

The almost inaccessible retreats of these wild mountains are inhabited by many of these little negroes called negritos and of which we have spoken above; sometimes they are hunted in their homes and that we try to make them some prisoners, choosing for that the youngest, that the inhabitants bring home until they reach the age of reason, employing them, in the meantime, to various services, after which we make them freedom. One of our friends had one that he gave us; his name was Panchote, he did not lack intelligence and was especially full of mischief.

The top of La Cordilière is covered with impenetrable forests that live the animal stages of which we have spoken in describing the province of Bulacan because the animal kingdom is pretty much the same throughout the archipelago. The woods construction would be the source of immense wealth, if these forests were exploited as they should be; but the paths are so difficult that, when the frigate the San Fernando was under construction at Cavite, we had to use up to eighty buffaloes and as many indios for dragging some large pieces of wood, which was all more expensive than buffaloes are rare and very expensive. Abucay, Orion and Balanga are the only pueblos of the province that offer a few products, because these are the only ones that are grown. Marivelès is a small pueblo of three hundred and seventy-nine tributes; he has an excellent well-sheltered harbor, with 15 to 17 fathoms of water, at the entrance of the small pass (bosa chica) of Manila Bay; We find there of fresh water, and the ships that go to China by the monsoon from the northeast could stop there and take some provisions. This port has often served as a refuge for ships during bad weather; his entrance, which is, they say, very easy, is perfectly determined by Garda Point to the northeast and cochino islets to the southwest. He had been to establish a free port for ships that do not would not want to enter Manila Bay.

PR0VINCE OF PAMPANGA.

The province of Pampanga is the most beautiful and the most rich of the Philippines and was nicknamed, for this reason New Castile; it is located northwest of Manila, between the provinces of Pangasinan in the north, from Bulacan to south, from a small part of Zambales Island to the west, and from the province of Nueva-Ecija to the east. It is about 20 leagues from north to south and 45 to 46 from east to west; she counts 27 pueblos, to know:

Bacolor.	1,709 ½ tributos,	8,548 hab.
Betis.	550 ½	2,752
Guagua..	1,675	8,375
Sesmoan.	702	3,540
Lubao.	1,842	9,220
Santa Rita.	665	3,325
Porac.	732	3,660
San Fernando..	2,115	10,575
Méjico.	1,869	9,345
Santa Ana.	976	4,880
Arayat.	1,611	8,055
Cabiao.	988	4,940
Gapan.	4,635	23,375
San Miguel.	1,061	5,305
Angeles..	728	3,640
Mabalacad.	745 ½	3,718
Tarlac.	869	4,345
Magalang..	936	4,680
Santo Tomàs.	735	3,675
Minalim.	995	4,965
Macabebe..	2,732 ½	13,662
Apalit.	1,582	7,910
San Simon.	1,112	5,560
San Luis.	1,623	8,115
Candaba.	1,631	8,155
Capas (mission).	174	870
Paz..	577	1,885
		177,045

We divide the Pampanga in high and low; the first includes all the stretch stretching from Santa Ana as far as Pangasinan and Nueva-Ecija, and the second all part between SantaAna and the sea.

The Higher "Pampanga is only weakly watered, because that the rivers have a course too fast; we take care of it mainly deer and wild boar hunting during the rainy season, when the lower part is delivered to almost continual floods.

The Lower Pampanga is very fertile and well populated; his plantations are delicious and its temperature is very pleasant. Caravallo Mountains, which come from the north of the island Luzon, comes out a river which passes by Tambangan, and successively joined with those of Dimalay, Bongabon and from Santor. Near the fortress of San Isidro, she receives the Gapan River, and another small river near Arayat; she then bathes Cadaval and meets at the river of Quingoa, so famous for the limpidity of its waters, at the edge from which the inhabitants of Manila go every year to pass some time to bathe. It is navigable in almost all its course and it rolls glitter of gold, of same as the Gapan River. Those who gather in the sands of the latter are of a very high title.

The rivers flowing down from Mount Arayat are not as streams in the dry season, but become impetuous torrents at the time of the rains. It's also at, this time that is formed, by the meeting of the rains with the rivers, the Pinac de Cadava, a large lake located east of the pueblo from Bacolor and to the left of the great river; he has 10 or 12 leagues in circumference, but at the time of the drought, it disappears and leaves in its place beautiful and rich pastures.

It is about this time, approximately, that one sins in this lake a large amount of dalacs, fish of which the indios are extremely fond and who is, indeed, delicious. It was claimed that these fish were found in the fields, because at the time of the great floods, they, penetrate, through the mud, into places where there is no only a few inches of water. The Dalac looks like a big and very short eel, and his way of swimming makes that it adopts preferably the muddy places. The one that does not is not consumed locally is transported to Manila, where he come alive. This dish is not so esteemed by Europeans that he deserves to be, because he is too common.

Mount Arayat is one of the most remarkable in the province. Manila's pyramidal point is distinctly recognizable, in a northerly direction northwesterly; his flanks extend widely in the surrounding area and its peak passes for offer the opening of a vast crater. This mountain is nevertheless covered with lush vegetation, and this is in the impenetrable massifs of its dark forests that inhabit the indios called *Balanes* and hordes of Móntescos who live by rapine; these mountains are also populated from Negritos.

Most of the Pampanga rivers roll gold, but especially those of Abayon, Matalantang and Cabiao; the waters of some others contain ferruginous materials, especially at San Miguel, where iron is very abundant and is even on the ground.

The natural productions are the same as those of the provinces we have had occasion to talk about, and, to avoid the repetition of a dry nomenclature, we do not those for which it is more particularly distinguished: in this number, the first place is due

undoubtedly to the famous Gapan tobacco, which, less strong and more delicate than that of Cagayan, serves to form the tripa, that is to say inside the cigar, while the other is used for the envelope. Tobacco is one of the main wealth of this province.

Indigo, both in paste and liquid, is a very advantageous product for Pampanga, where we also harvest kind of peas called pongos. The fruits of all species are so abundant, that they are loaded with canoes that we ship for Manila. Banana and mango are of superior quality. The bouré is a palm tree draws starch called yoro, food of many natives: this same tree also provides the snorkel, which makes wine and vinegar, as well as a kind of black sugar and even jams; the leaves are used to cover houses of the natives.

The Yorróte, which gives the beautiful cotton which one garnishes the pillows, and the blanket that provides a different kind of gogo of the one we talked about and whose job makes it easy the washing of gold sands, are among the products of the province. Its forests feed a lot so huge of faux beasts, that, in the year 1819, it was killed, it is said, more than 7,000 deer in the only village Tarlac: it is with the flesh of this animal and with that of the beef that the indios do what they call tapa, that's say salted and sun-dried meat.

In Pampanga we make fabrics of everything in this case, terracotta vessels, which are brought to Manila, and in the vicinity of the bay we make lime. Women take an active part in industrial work that men; but agriculture, so easy by the high soil fertility, seems to be the favorite taste residents of the province; and its various branches, it is that of the tobacco to which they deal with the most ardor, because of the profit they make from smuggling.

Bacolor is the chief town of Pampanga; this town, residence of the mayor, is located in a plain, not far from the great river that gives its name to the province, and with which it communicates by a wide channel dug under the direction of the corregidor, Colonel Don Juan Olea, military man distinguished. Bacolor is 15 or 16 leagues from Manila, and yet the air we breathe enjoys a great reputation healthy, the north winds blowing in December, January and February brings fever. The population is there beautiful.

The town of Bacolor was the capital of the Philippines for a while the English invasion of 1762. This was where Simon de Anda de Salazar withdrew with the few Spanish troops that he had under his orders. This town hall is surrounded by one large number of villages, all remarkable for fertility of their soil and by the beautiful look they present.

The roads that cross this province are those that serve communication with northern Luçon Island. During the floods we are often forced to throw on the submerged grounds, the bamboo bridges, that are removed when the beautiful season comes. Yet it would be much more easy to dig channels through which the water flows, while channeling the rivers would be obtained the important benefit of communicating Manila Bay with the sea bathing the northern shores of the island of Luçon; for it seems certain that its rivers communicate with the Lallo or Tagus River flowing into the sea.

PROVINCE OF ZAMBALES.

This province is poor, despite the huge resources that it possesses, because communications by land are difficult and she has not known so far to take advantage of those offered by the sea, which bathes it west and form south the beautiful and convenient bay of Subic or Suba; it is bounded on the east by Pampanga and the province of Pangasinan, and ends at the north by the tip of Bolinao and the Gulf of Lingayen. Its length is about 50 leagues, but it is very narrow; the mountains that separate it from Pampanga are part of the Marivelès chain. The towns of Zambales are almost all located on the edge of the sea; they enjoy a mild and healthy temperature; they are fifteen, but the states of tribes and population only provide details of ten, which are the following:

Iba..	826 tributos,	4,130 habit.
Subic.	470	2,350
Masinloc.	969 ½	4,848
Botolan..	699	3,495
Santa Cruz.	773	3,865
Bolinao..	1,015 ½	5,047
Sarapsap.	617 ½	3,088
Balincaguin.	1,030	5,150
Aguo..	511	2,555
Banni.	501 ½	2,507
		37,033

This province being, as you can see, very little inhabited, it is obliged to bring the indios of Ilocos to cultivate land.

Iba, chief town, is 80 leagues from Manila, in a plain, a very short distance from the sea: it is a very small place. The coasts of the province have several ports of sea, and, among others, those of Santa Cruz, where they cannot enter that small vessels, and Subie, including the bay is confused with that of Manila.

The productions of the three kingdoms are the same as in the other provinces, but only a small amount is drawn party, lack of arms and outlets.

The Franciscan fathers, who were the first to settle in the Zambales, experienced the greatest obstacles to the colonize; but their admirable perseverance overcame all of them. Almost all the villages were built by them. They thought they noticed some differences in the inhabitants of the indio races; they wore shaved hair on the front of the head, in the way of the Japanese, use which may have been used to indicate their origin, as well as some feature brands we have met in other provinces. Zambales provides one militia regiment, to which its name was given.

PROVINCE OF PANGASINAN.

Pangasinan is one of the best cultivated provinces from the Philippines; it is rich and interesting under all reports. Located northwest of Manila, it is bounded by the north, by the province of Ilocos; at noon, by the Pampanga and the Zambales; to the west by the Gulf of Lingayan, and to to the east, by the mountains of the Igorrotes and the river of the Aguo. Its shape is irregular. Here are the names of the thirty villages that it contains.

Lingayan..	3,482 tributos,	17,410 habit.
Binmaley..	3,759	18,795
Dagupan.	1,874	9,370
Calasiao.	2,407	12,035
Mañgaldan.	2,701	13,505
San Jacinto..	1,551	7,855
Manavag.	2,232	11,160
Sual.	452	2,260
San Isidro.	1,539	7,695
Salasa.	1,539	7,695
Aguilar..	1,029	5,145
Mangatarem.	1,253	6,265
Santa Barbara.	1,282	6,410
San Carlos.	3,690	18,450
Malasiqui..	1,701	8,505
Villasis.	481	2,405
Bayambang..	1,798	8,990
Paniqui.	711	3,555
San Fabian.	1,886	9,430
Barue.	252	1,260
Santo Tomas.	889	4,445
Agoo..	1,388	6,940
Atiñgan.	910	4,550
Baoang.	1,912	9,560
San Fernando.	882	4,410
San Juan..	898	4,490
Bacnotan.	946	4,730
Camiling.	»	»
Ariñgay.	897	4,485
Binalonan.	»	»
		221,805

(68)

Lingayen, the provincial capital, is within walking distance from the bottom of the bay he takes his name, near the big one River of the Aguo, and not far from the borders of the province de Zambales, is a rich, populous and industrial city.

The inhabitants of Pangasinan are gentle and kind easy; they are engaged in the cultivation of the earth, including their work are run in some localities by Europeans which occurs only in very few other provinces. The pady or raw rice abounds there and sells for 5 real caban when it worth 6 in Manila and 7 or 8 in the Biscay: so many are they going to load this food for the bring to China, to enjoy the franchise including the river of Canton enjoys the introduction of rice into the empire. Indigo is also a major trade item for the province.

The Pangasinan is flooded with many rivers that they flow into the gulf and often overflow, forming then species of lakes where the fish nibble and live also wild duck clouds, which one takes in nets and thus dragged to the ground, where they are killed with a stick. Roads are generally impassable during the rainy season, and two circumstances do not allow unfortunately not enjoying the rivers for contact remote parts of the province: first is that their course is embarrassed by these logs of trees known in the United States as snags, and which make the navigation of the great rivers so perilous of North America; the second circumstance is that their shores are infested with criminals who attack travelers and loot vessels. Fertile plains and an enchanting appearance stretch between the mountains of the Igorrotes and those of Zambales.

The Agno is the largest river in the province; if it was possible to make it navigable by getting rid of it of tree trunks that obstruct it, he would place the chief in communication with the Gulf of Lingayan.

All these rivers flow with gold; but there are some where abounds far more than others: the inhabitants of their shores mainly deal with the washing of their sand, who is so rich that in a few moments they get enough gold to meet their needs for a week whole; they facilitate their separation by using one gogo cold infusion. The bars of the San FabianetdeDagupan rivers are particularly rich, especially after the rainy season, which brings the golden glitter from above mountains; it is here that the Igorrotes exploit them and from where they come to sell the products of their industry to inhabitants of the province. It is also found, in the Pangasinan, mines of iron, sulfur, and even so on ensures, copper.

Forests produce timber as we know it transportation to the province's yards, from where they left several ships; and other wood is used for woodworking, or to manufacture coal.

Fishing and hunting are abundant, too excellent pastures feed a large number of horses and wild buffaloes.

It seems that the province was once volcanic; the story reports that, in the years 4655 to 1640, under the General Corcuera's government erupted in the mountains where, however, today we do not find one no trace of crater.

Although agriculture is thriving with great activity in the Pangasinan, where even the precaution is taken, as in Malaysia, pick rice rice by strain, since it is alleged that the use of the fake causes great waste, despite that, let's say, sometimes it happens harvest is lacking. In these cases, the inhabitants feed themselves of sago and yoro they draw from some species of palm, which they dry the marrow in the sun, after having it washed, sieved and decanted.

There are some prime areas where two crops are harvested a year, one of sugar cane and the other of rice; the pylon, equivalent to 2 arrobes, white sugar comes to 1 plate and half; but the most productive plant in the province is, without contradiction, the indigotier. But the same reason that favors this branch of culture, that is the humidity of the land, harm to that of cotton, whose products are not very considerable, as well as that of the abacus, which has often been planted there as a test, but without any result.

indios are more industrious in this province than in many others, which earned them the nickname Pampanga Chinese; they are responsible for transporting the goods from village to village, and even go into the mountains trade with the Igorrotes, who are in the wild; others drive cattle to Manila. There is a considerable amount in this province of coconut oil, boiling, in a little water, the grated coconut meat.

Pangasinan is one of the most industrious provinces of the Philippines: the inhabitants are renowned as builders of ships, witness Victoria, handsome three masts from the port of 6 to 700 barrels, on which we made our return to Europe and which is one of the best sailboats from the colony. The Pangasiniians also have talent extraordinary to imitate all the objects shown to them : carpenters, sculptors, jewelers, etc., do not give him nothing to those in Manila. There are tanneries and all kinds of shoes are made there, as well as in the capital. The houses are clean and well built, and the churches are remarkable for their beauty.

This province could become the center of a trade active between Macao, Hong Kong and the various ports of the Southern China is closer than it is Manila Bay; it would supply China with rice abundance.

PROVINCES OF ILOCOS SUR AND NORTE.

These two provinces, which once formed only one alone, they were separated in two by a royal order of the February 2, 1818; but the relationship they have with each other we are committed to bringing them together in one article, since they are differ only by their extent, the first being much larger and more populated than the second. Both are agricultural, commercial, but mostly manufacturing: the inhabitants are distinguished as weavers; and, on their bamboo trades, they make, with cotton native, all kinds of white and nut cloth they dye also different colors; but the fabrics they do make are common species, the fines becoming rather in Bulacan, Tondo, Camarines and Iloïlo.

The locos are located on the west coast of Luzon Island; they extend from the northern tip of the island, or Punta de Cabicunga, to the tip of Namacpacan, in noon; their combined length is about 40 leagues, though their width is not considerable: they are bounded on the north and to the west, by the sea of China, at noon by the provinces

from Pangasinan and Pampanga, and east by the Cagayans and through the mountains of New Province (Nueva-Provincia), that we formed by borrowing some land at Ilocos Sur.

The two Ilocos contain thirty-seven towns, of which twenty-five for the south and twelve for the north; here are their names:

Pueblos de l'Ilocos-sud.

Vigan.	3,445 tributos,	17,225 hab.
Caoayan.	1,216	6,080
Santa Catalina de Baba. .	2,381	11,905
Narvacan.	3,245 ½	16,228
Santa Maria.	2,143	10,715
Coveta.	178	890
San Estevan.	1,068	5,340
Candon.	2,885 ½	14,427
Santa Lucia.	3,756	18,780
Tagnding.	1,401 ½	7,008
Bañgar.	1,506	7,530
Namacpacan.	1,400 ½	7,002
Balaoang.	1,507 ½	6,538
Santa Catalina.	2,290	11,450
San Vicente..	1,112	5,560
Bantay.	1,958	9,740
Santo Domingo.	1,824	9,120
Magsiñgal.	1,374	6,870
Lapo.	1,149	5,745
Cabugao.	1,912	9,560
Sinait.	1,293	6,285

Beñguet.	1,455	7,175
Tayon.	907	4,535
Mision Nra Sra de la Paz. .	210	1,050
Pidigan.	529	2,645
		209,405 hab.

Pueblos d'Ilocos-nord.

Laoag.	6,780 ½ tributos,	33,905 hab.
San Nicolas..	2,171	10,855
Batac..	3,515 ½	17,577
Paoay.	3,030	15,150
Badoc.	1,714 ½	8,573
San Miguel ou Sarrat. . .	1,525 ½	7,627
Dingras..	2,575 ½	12,878
Piddig et Santiago. . . .	1,781	8,905
Bintar.	1,424	7,120
Bacarra.	3,352 ½	16,762
Pasuquin.	965 ½	4,828
Nagpartian. Bañgui.	1,030 ½	5,152
		149,550 hab.
Plus les habitants d'Ilocos-sud.		209,405
Ce qui fait, pour les deux Ilocos. . . .		358,733 hab.

The largest town in the province of southern Ilocos is Vigan, and the other is the town from Ilocos-northeast to Laoag; these two towns are 17 leagues each other and Vigan 60 leagues from Manila; this one is built on the left bank of the river of this name, which is one of the arms of Abra. Vigan is the seat of the Mayor and the seat of the Bishop of New Segovia; several are noted public buildings, as well as barracks for infantry, artillery and cavalry. On its construction sites are being built cabotage buildings; his business is in the hands of the Chinese méstizos who maintain relations with Manila and who live in a separate neighborhood called Pariancillo. The inhabitants of this city do not neglect anything for expand their business relationships; they formed with the Tinguianes or Chinese descendants of the Limahon pirate, who live in wild craft in the surrounding mountains.

Communications by land and water are easy in these provinces, and this circumstance is very favorable to its business and industry, to which it contributes to a great activity; it is above all abra river they owe this benefit. After changing, near the town hall, its name in that of Vigan, throws himself into the sea by three mouths; its main arm passes through Sainte-Catherine, and the other two by Vigan, Bantay and San Vicente. It is by descending this river that the Tinguianes bring to the inhabitants of the Ilocos much of the wood they need.

The Ilocos seaports are: Darigayo, which can receive all kinds of vessels; Cavayan, located near the mouths of four rivers, all of which are closed at December, without the pontines being able to leave; but they are safe there during downwind, because that they can enter the rivers. Santiago, San Esteban, Santa Cruz: North of Dirique, there is a handle for the pontines. Finally, the port of Salomagué, in the jurisdiction of Cabuyao, is the largest, healthiest of all province and the safest in the northern monsoon.

The two Ilocos are both very mountainous; but however, the southern province is less than the northern province. A ridge that runs from east to west and one names the Sierra Madre extending from Cagayan to Manila, and it is even claimed that it extends to the end south of the island of Luzon, in the province of Albay. There is a territory within the mountains considerable, rich and fertile, which has recently been detailed with locos to form a separate province, to which the name of Nueva-Provincia was provisionally given; it is inhabited by a large number of independent peoples, especially those living on the slope Western Cordillera have frequent relationships with the indios, with whom they exchange gold and wood. Where we noticed in their character of great similarity with that of the Chinese: like them, they are very fond of the flesh of the cat and dog, and they are even trying to get these animals against the products of their country. They have leaders that they choose among the bravest of them. When they are in debt to each other, they pledge their children, and the creditor has the right to sell them if the repayment does not take place at a time fixed. There are twenty-two villages in these mountains two visitas, five missions and eighty and two rancherías or families living together; all of them are Tinguians: there are also seventy-nine ranches in Igorrotes and fourteen of Negritos, who all pay tribute. We will describe these peoples in detail in the chapter that we have specially dedicated them.

The Ilocos trade consists mainly of wood framing, wax, rice, sugar and gold powder. We distill alcoholic liquors with cane sugar. The inhabitants harvest fruits of all kinds. The hunt is their favorite exercise and could become, for them, very lucrative, if they had greater opportunities. The mountains provide them with a large quantity of buffaloes, deer, wild boar, oxen, and even wild horses good body build. They enjoy a great reputation; their size is higher than that of horses other provinces, and they have a very hard ball, which is of great importance to the Philippines, where we have not the habit of shoeing horses: they ride with extreme facilitated the most tortuous trails and slopes the faster; so are they really valuable for traveling in this province.

The temperature of Ilocos is fresher and more pleasant than the more southerly provinces: that in the mountains, as in those of Cagayan, Reaumur's thermometer sometimes goes down up to - + - 8 °. It is for this reason that patients with Manila go to Ilocos breathe a purer air and heal themselves dyssentery, a disease so common in the torrid zone, where the body of man is more than elsewhere exposed to influences

atmospheric.

Regardless of the products we have listed above, the Ilocos still harvest indigo, wheat, ajonjoli, sugar, coffee, cocoa, coconut, and all known productions in the Philippines. The vegetables are also very abundant and very tasty.

Wheat, which grows mainly in northern pueblos, ships for Manila, where he sells himself for consumption Europeans. The mulberry tree grows everywhere and would provide a abundant food to the silkworms if one wanted to indulge to this industry. We assure that almost all fruits from Europe could be obtained in the Ilocos.

It would not be easy to make all species known of the different trees that are found in the vast forests of Ilocos and New Province; however, we will try to point out some of the most remarkable, leaving them the Indian names because we do not have them yet assigned scientific denominations:

A species of cedar (cedrela odorata, BL), calantas Tagales.

The molave (vitex geniculata, BI.) Is a hardwood, good for the frame and even for the construction: we actually also piles (harrues), because he is incorruptible.

The mangachapuy (vatica mangacliapoi, Bl.), which amounts to so high that it could be made, it is said, in one piece, masts for large vessels, if its wood was not too heavy: the Chinese use it for watch their shampans.

The guijo (mocaneraguiso, Bl.), also known as lawaan, is a big and big tree whose ribs were made and the bowling of galleons. The wood is so hard, that the balls can hardly leave an impression.

The narra or naga [petrocarpus pallidus, Bl., give a reddish wood with darker veins: we make beautiful furniture.

The tindalo, mahogany species of which we make beautiful tables.

Ebony, cahuy itim.

The balamiagas, the sasaluyen and the anaguep are odoriferous woods.

Lumban (aleurites lobala, Bl.), the batacang, etc., take a beautiful chandelier: we make tables and boats.

The bañaba [munchausia speciosa, is used for floorboards flats and ships. The ulis is a lumber.

The taculao and the parunapin of which one makes pins of ships.

With the gatasan we make the rafters of the houses.

The natives use the wood of Yabao, Yabuit, búlala, daeng, casabang, candarona and bacalao to make anchors (sinipites) for their boats.

We will only indicate the cañaren, Varo or arangen, the márumpir, the maraquitel, the satmayen, the bio, the diran, the lariuti, the barangoan, the taracatad, lepacae, lépalo Maria, the paga-paluteñ, ecañafistula, calisai, talisay, Misen,

Campeche wood is well known in Europe: the indios use it instead of nails, make a dye and prescribe a decoction in the spitting of blood, disease against which they regard him as very efficient.

The baticilung (millingtonia pinnata) and the subrut give excellent lumber; we do with their leaves a kind of mastic to caulk ships.

The dignee and the mabolo whose wood is heavy; the heart looks like ebony: the indios make combs.

The anunang, it is claimed that by tying the most furious bull or buffalo with Vibbey trunk or mountain fig, he tames a this moment.

Barincocorong provides excellent charcoal for forges.

With lawaan we make masts for small boats.

The antenna gives a kind of incense.

The bacaoan is a dyewood that believes in the land where there is saltpetre.The bark of Yadaan, sprayed and thrown into a river, kill all the fish in it.

The amboynan is a tree of great utility; his wood serves for the frame; its bark whitens the tissues, and with his ashes we make soap.

The saquiat, another timber, has properties medicinal products for indios.

The leaves of Yoplas or asperilla are used to polish the woods.

The balete provides good lumber. With the tender leaves and bark made canvases that the indios call Bahacs and they use to make loincloths.

The bagao is a majestic tree under which the indios formerly performed their religious ceremonies; his fruit, which is bigger than an apple, has tender flesh and a pleasant taste: it is eaten before being quite ripe; when it is more, it is intoxicating as much as the most strong. This fruit also provides an oil which is used as biting to make the color take on the cotton that one complexion.

Baroan and Bansanga give good timber; the bataano is hardly of use, because its trunk lets out a juice that swells the skin.

Camaring has become the subject of many fabulous stories; so, for example, it is said that people who pass downwind of this tree swell and die by the effect its exhalations, and that the only way to save them is to have them deflate by rubbing their bodies with water or salt.

The fruit of the aniqui is a kind of almond called *pili*.

The balanac is a tree whose smoke, when it is burns, kills people who approach to 4 or S vares distance.

Regardless of the trees we have just named, there are an infinity of others including bark or root has medical virtues. In this number there are several whose infidels and even Christians hide the names, but which they use with advantage. It would be to be desired that we could enrich the pharmacopoeia of knowledge these precious plants; but those who have them the secret do not want to communicate it to anyone who are able to make it useful to civilization, they are gladly pass it on to their descendants as a traditional heritage. What is certain is that there is who are doing wonderful cures with these roots or these bark, which they scrape, with a ray tail, a few strands in water. I will quote, on this subject, facts of which he There are some who are to my personal knowledge.

The leaves of coscosipa, macerated and applied on a nail, heal it almost instantly.

Those of bani, mixed with vinegar, are watched as a condom against contagious diseases, such that smallpox and others: to use them, we get rub the body.

The bang wood is a remedy whose effectiveness is known throughout the province to heal raspberry bubas.

Macabuhay, a rattan whose bark is dotted with tubers: taken in decoction, this bark heals fever and affections of the stomach; sprayed and dried in the oven, it closes the ulcerations of the palate: we used it with the greatest advantage in many cases of this kind. All Manila has witnessed extraordinary cures made with this plant, which we can certify the good effects, having found them ourselves. Strong incredulous, in the origin, about some indio and Chinese medications, we have added faith to it only forced by the obvious from what we see with our own eyes.

The aranio, a species of betel, is an excellent tonic.

The ampiag, another liana, whose leaves heal the
most rebel pain.

The root of the Agpalo is good against coughing; leaves of calachùchi make the cephalalgie disappear by holding applied on the head.

The aroo, a species of pine, furnishes lumber; his bark and its root are used against scorbutic affections.

From the trunk of the bitaog or wood of Mary (palo Maria) flows a resin with which one makes an ointment that heals perfectly malignant anthrax and other affections of this kind. Caribusao has the same virtue; the bagbagatol hurries the exit teeth and cures inflammation of the gums.

Among the plants that provide valuable medicines, we must still count saleng, the fruit of blood, Yerbaaca or herb of St. Mary, species of artemisia, banaag bark,

galatgat, candaroma bark, leaves of cacupies, tisao, disol root and an infinity others that it would be too long to list here, but whose we are told cures so prodigious, that it is impossible for us to add an equal faith to all.

We have already mentioned above some trees used for dyes, but there are still many others; such are the root of lavar, the candle leaf, the laundry calunay, the auanguey leaf, the patani leaf, the fruit prias or camias, that of canuyao and bark of dongon.

The mineral kingdom is no less rich in this province than the other two. The gold that the rivers roll indicates that the mountains must contain mines; in the surroundings of Santa Maria there are ferruginous substances, and to the south of this same pueblo there is a source of sulphurous mineral water that springs from a rock.

The two provinces of Ilocos are very manufactures; we there were more than twenty thousand trades in the past, but number has been greatly reduced by the importation of foreign manufacture. We do not yet know what to attribute the preference given to these, because those who are are still doing in the country are much stronger and of very good complexion, which we can certify by our own experience. It makes calicoes of any quality, canvases of one color, other stripes, tablecloths and towels, bedspreads, silk fabrics and cotton, abaca stuffs alone or mixed with others materials; coarse cloths for use by the lower classes. Native ginghams were adopted for the troop, and the coyote or yellowish cottons, which has retained the the natural color of cotton that bears this name, was fashionable among the higher classes. General Don Mariano Ricafort, who felt how important it was to meet these manufactures, ordered, in the years 1826 and 1827, that the troops would be clothed in the future only with stuffs made in the country. These arrangements were executed, but unfortunately we did not believe that we should persist there.

Fishing is so abundant on the coast of Ilocos and in their rivers, which one Indian alone can salt, in a season, enough fish to feed during any year.

It goes without saying that a country with so many products diverse, either of nature or of industry, can not be to have a very active business. Indeed, the pueblos do not only trade with each other, but with the neighboring provinces, and they derive great benefit from their trades. The communications of Ilocos with Manila do by sea and by land. By the first way we transport rice, wheat, padi, sugar, cotton, wax, vinegar of sugar so renowned under the name of Ilocos vinegar, finally the various dyes, and in general all the goods congestion. By the way of the earth we send fabrics we have talked about and to which we will add the terlingas, quinumits, sinagudans; the big canvases called by the natives *ticnapils* and those to which they have given the name of Iniguidans, that Igorrotes buy for to cover themselves and to whom they attach a great price. Ilocos is also producing sailcloths different sizes: we have collected samples of all these manufactures and, in general, of all the products Philippine industry; we joined a very detailed synoptic table, referring, by numbers order, to all these various samples. We refer to this chart and these samples, which we filed in two, one at the Ministry of Commerce and the other at the Conservatoire arts and crafts.

CHAPTER XII.
FOLLOWING THE GEOGRAPHY OF THE PROVINCES.

Nuèva-Provincia.- Cagayan.- The Batanes and Babuyanes Islands. -
Nueva Ecija. - Nueva-Biscaya. -Cavity.- Laguna.

THE NUEVA-PROVINCIA.

We have already said, in the previous chapter, that under the name of Nueva-Provincia or New Province means the extent of territory between the llocos to the west, the province of Cagayan and New Biscay to the east, and which consists mainly of the large cord that divides Luzon Island from north to south. It's in these mountains inhabited by most of the wild tribes we will describe later and who, under different special names, as a whole, what in the province from Pangasinan, we call Igorrotes or Móntescos, and, in that of Cagayan, Caliñgat, which means enemies. Moreover, he reigns in the country itself a great confusion over these names, and one does not agree on the distinction to be made between them.

Although the New Province extends in a length of 50 leagues and form, therefore, a considerable territory, we will not give it a particular description, because his products are the same as those of neighboring provinces; it is watered by the great river from Abra and the Agno.

PROVINCE OF CAGAYAN.

This province is one of the largest in Luzon, but the least populated; it forms the northern end of the island, bounded on the north by the Batsi sea, on the south by New Bizkaia, to the west by the cordillière which separates it New Province and by the Province of Nueva Ecija, from whom she is also separated by a chain of mountains. The length of this province is about 86 leagues out of 17 wide. Part of the peninsula called Engaño helps to train her. It contains twenty-one pueblos, here are the names and the population.

Lallo.	737 tributos,	3,685 hab.
Gutaran. . . . . / Nasiping. . . .	377	1,885
Camalaniugán.	571	2,855
Amulung. . . . / Aguig.	546	2,730
Tuguegarao.	2,497	17,485
Cabagan.	2,237	11,185
Tamauini.	527	2,635
Jurgao. . . . . / Tabang. . . . . / Piat.	571	2,853

Tuao.	727	5,655
Malaveg. . . Mavanan . . Santa Cruz.	527	2,635
Apari.	1,195	5,965
Bugay.	148	740
Abulug.	631	3,155
San Juan. . . Massi.	541	2,705
		58,580 hab.

The Cagayan is very hilly and the air is unhealthy at because of the vast virgin forests as well as uncultivated it contains; what are the fevers intermittent conditions that endemicly prevail and newcomers are infallibly affected, while the savages do not feel the effects. One of the causes of this difference is, without contradiction, that of food. indios feed partly on maize, while the Móntescos live almost exclusively from the rice they grow, which provides them with a much healthier food than Turkey wheat, which is eaten as it usually is with voracity, gives the tympanite or the swelling of the basventre, followed by very serious indigestion, but which is cured, when taken in time, by the use of a little wine or eau-de-vie. However, it must be noted that the air of this province has become a little less unhealthy since that we took the precaution of cutting down trees in the neighborhood immediate pueblos; and the inhabitants, educated by experience, avoid today as much as they can from to expose oneself to the serene, returning home having the fall of day. As for the temperature of Cagayan, it is colder in this province than in any other part of the archipelago, and they even pretend to have seen hail fall from it; he is certain that, in the month of January and February, we will feels the need to wear warmer clothes. The people of this province are, in general, honest and good; the flight is, so to speak, unknown, and in the nice weather, we sleep everywhere open windows.

General Enrile, Governor of the Philippines, having an inspection trip to this province, this circumstance was of great benefit to her because the first care the general was to make his communications easier; he opened the roads that exist today and that follow presently the mails of the administration of the post office by letters, and had several bridges thrown over the rivers.

The chief town of Cagayan is the little pueblo of Lallo, located in the north of the province: this is where lives the alkalde mayor, which is at the same time collector of tobacco; that is, he is responsible for buying, on behalf of the government, all the tobacco that the inhabitants cultivate. This alcaldie is the most lucrative of all the colony because the collector receives a bonus of 2 reals or 1 fr. 25 on each fardo 2 arrobes (25 kilograms) of tobacco; what him reported, common year, from 45 to 16,000 piastres (more than 80,000 francs).

The situation of Lallo, on the edge of the Tajo or Apari, which crosses the entire province from north to south, and continues even his course further, since it seems that he throws himself in the Pampanga River and communicates, by this means, with the Bay of Manila, could offer to this pueblo of big benefits for the trade, if we cleared its course obstacles he presents to navigation. If we succeeded, Manila would be there in communication almost direct with the island of Formóse and with China, which are not separated from Luzon only by the small islands of Babuyanes and those of the Bashis, whose position seems to indicate that the Philippine archipelago was connected, in a remote period, to the Indian continent.

The Lalloa River two springs, one in the province from Nueva-Ecija and the other from Nueva-Biscaya; it is wide, fast, sinuous, deep in some places and lined villages on both shores and up to its mouth, near Apari. Bricks can go up to Lallo, but his navigation is very dangerous at the time of the rains; its mouth forms a port that offers good anchorages. Without counting an infinity of rivers which come to swell the waters of this river, we still note, in the north of this province, that of Aleguin, which comes out of the lake of that name, that of of Abelue and that of Massi.

The mountains of this province, close to those of the Nueva-Provincia, with which they merge, contain also wild tribes whose character of the physiognomy, and especially that of the eyes, reveals an origin Chinese. The chain of Caravallo de Baler is teeming with Negritos whose hair is black and frizzy like those other provinces, but many of them some who have less black and less curly hair. This is where we also meet the Catalan women who harvest the best tobacco in the Philippines: this quality does not not sell; it can only be obtained through exchanges and use it to make presents. Some of these tribes savages are brave, never retreating before nobody; they are, in general, very superstitious. Adultery is punished with death.

The mountains of Cagayan abound in animals of all species, but especially buffaloes, deer, wild boars, in oxen and horses. All rivers are full of fish and provide a considerable portion of the indio food. There are in the province some deposits of gold and iron mines; plaster and red ocher are abundant. Among the woods, there is ebony, which is of great hardness and that mainly produces the peninsula from Engafio and the surroundings of the tip of this name.

This wood, as well as some others, rattans and oxen are the main export items after tobacco, which is even the only article that produces a lot of money. All the inhabitants are engaged in its culture, and the government buys more than 200,000 piastres (1,100,000 francs). The province is likely to produce many more again, if it was not for lack of arms. The increase of In addition, the population would have the advantage of giving a more great growth in culture and, consequently, in reducing diseases, results of bad food.

The Cagayan is subject to hurricanes or typhoons that prevail in the Batsi Strait. The Apari River becomes then very dangerous; it is also in the season of rains, because of the trunks of trees it carries: this does not prevent large enough ships from coming shelter in bad weather; but they must be there warn carefully. The bricks go back to Lallo, where they will take their load.

THE BATANES OR BABUYANES ISLANDS.

These islands form two groups located north of the island of Luzon and separated from each other by Balingbang Strait: the first consists of five islands, some of which are volcanic. Caminguin, which is the largest of all, abounds in sulfur: there is a port called San Pio-Quinto.

The second group is the one with the easternmost island is called Bachie Island (Bacchus), name given to it by Dampier, because of the orgy that his sailors made there, in intoxicating with coconut wine. This is where the pueblo is Batan, residence of the Spanish governor; she is located at latitude 20° 55 '5 " N. and longitude 128 ° 17' 57" longitude is; it has two anchorages: one, to the east, Juana Bay, which is about 15 fathoms the coast; the other is on the west coast.

The Batane Islands contain three pueblos: those of Santo Domingo de Basco, San Carlos de Marigatao and José de Ibana. The inhabitants, who number about 8,000, are not subject to tribute because of their extreme poverty. The government commissioner does not receive, as contributions, in kind, that a little turtle flake and a few other items. These islanders, who are large and well-made, have only a poor reputation for probity.

The Batanes feed very beautiful horses, which we have wanted to import into the island of Luzon; but they never could acclimatize in the Cagayan, although there have been some grass for fodder. The winds that prevail in these areas at certain times of the year, and typhoons that do not never fail to burst with monsoon changes, make the approaches to these islands very dangerous; however, we goes through the straits, when going from Manila to China, during the northeast monsoon and when we come from the Cape of Good Hope.

PROVINCE OF NUEVA-ECIJA.

This province is the largest, but the poorest, of all the island of Luzon, which she occupies a part of the coast east, forming about half of the northeastern coast of the peninsula of Engaño from the island of Malançon to Bay Lake; its extent is about 100 leagues from north to south; it is bounded on the east by the Pacific Sea, and to the west by the provinces of Cagayan, Nueva-Biscaya, Pangasinan, Bulacan and Tondo.

Its shape, though very irregular, represents a species of triangle, whose base is placed on the coast of the ocean Pacific and the landlocked summit, to the west, between Pampanga and Pangasinan; its greatest width is about 25 leagues; it is separated from Cagayan by the famous mountain range which follows Mount Caravallo de Baler. The same chain also separates it from New Biscay, as well as base of Mount Caravallo, Pangasinan, by a river that passes near Lupao and will throw himself into the great river of the Agoo. The lands that produce the so-called Gapan tobacco and who, starting at Cabanatuan, go up to Mount Arayat, separate it from the Pampanga. The sea that bathes the coast of this province is very strong and very bad during the northeast monsoon.

The pueblos of Nueva-Ecija are fifteen in number, know:

Baler et Casignan. . . .	202 ½ tributos,	1,015 hab.
Cabanatuan.	1,124 ½	5,622
San José..	180	900
Lupao.	105 ½	528
Umiñgan.	208	1,040
Palusapis.	93	465
Santor..	356	1,780
Boñgabon.	474 ½	2,372
Binañgonan de Lampong.	849 ½	4,248
Polillo.	372 ½	1,862
Puncan.	61	305
Carranglan.	130	650
Pantabañgan.	153 ½	768
Casiguran.	202	1,010
Palanan.	159	745
		23,508 hab.

Bongabon, capital of the province, is very poor, as are all the pueblos of Nueva Ecija; its houses are built of nipa and wood. The corregidor receives salary, which only takes place in the provinces the less wealthy. It is not, moreover, that it is less fertile than the others, but it is not as well cultivated, which is due, in part, to the fact that the roads are impracticable: however Bongabon is bathed by the Santor River, which communicates with the Pampanga River. It would be very easy to improve the state of communications and to enrich, by this means, the province; it would suffice, for that, to establish between Bongabon and Gapoa, by Cabanatuan.

From this last pueblo, we go to Manila, by car, by the beautiful roads called calzadas. We go through Cabiao, Arayat, Santa Ana, San Simon, San Luis, Apalit, Calumpit, Dampol, Zunigoa, Polo, Ovando, Meycanayan, Tinacheros, Tondo and Binondo. These paths are very beautiful in the months of February, March, April and May. Nothing more graceful and more picturesque than the sites that we meet every step of the way through the countryside which separates these villages. There would be an episode full of interest to do, if space allowed us to describe each of them in particular, by attaching the various anecdotes related to it: it is with regret that we give up this pleasure.

The province of Nueva-Ecija is not yet fully subject; it is, moreover, covered with impenetrable forests which cause intermittent fevers including the natural ones they suffer a lot. These great forests however, had been partially exploited; we were doing lumber cuts that were shipped, by the rivers, on Manila Bay and which served, on

Cavite shipyards, the construction of the frigate, the San Fernando, sent a few years ago to the king of Spain.

The main river of this province has its source in the mountains of Caravallo, in Nueva Biscaya, receives, in its course, the rivers of Calanglan, of San José, of Boñgabon and Santor, then falls into that of Pampanga, which flows into the bay. The waters of all these rivers are very limpid; they are navigable for boats towing pieces of wood from most remote pueblos. Some are full of fish, but less so than most of the rivers of this archipelago. There are also some in the number that roll gold. One comes out of a lake in the north of the province and becomes the source of the Leguin, which sprinkles it in space 15 miles.

The province we are describing is crossed from north to south, in all its length, by the chain of Caravallo mountains, inhabited by Negritos, ferocious savages, Illongotes, Ibilaos and other unknown populations. The most interesting of these wild tribes is the so-called Dumagats who, from what we said about the mayor, are indios with red skin and crêpe hair, pulling on the chestnut. Wild animals abound in the forests of the Nueva Ecija. In the number, we notice a species of musk cat and a large amount of monkeys. The birds there are more numerous than in any other province; there is has mostly countless turtledoves of many species different, of which one, among others, of a brown color, similar to that of the little black turtle dove, which urged us to give it the name of *tórtola negrita*. Domestic animals are not lacking either; we find sheep, but the indios scorn them.

The vegetable kingdom is very rich, especially in timber, such as banava, guyo, molave, dungun: most of these woods are very hard and are not subject to rot in the water. Ships have been built in Manila. What are the colossal dimensions of these trees, which could provide planks of single piece, from one end to the other of a frigate of 44 guns, and whose trunks that had provided them had been dragged into the mountains by two hundred buffaloes mounted by so many indios!

These forests also provide tindalo wood and other precious wood for furniture, as well as some logwood.

The bourri is a palm tree whose starch is removed replace the rice when the harvest was bad. To the make it more palatable, locals mix honey, of which they sell the wax; they also feed on corn. Cabanatuan tobacco is as good as that of Gapan; it gives good profits to people who grow it and who sell it to the Gapan factory.

The other productions of the vegetable kingdom that this province are first a large amount of medicinal plants, of the ajonjoli from which the oil to be burned is extracted, nipa that serves to cover the houses, the buri which one makes of very elegant mats of all colors, and in the fabric from which are mixed threads and cords of gilded copper; the bark also grows abundantly in Nueva Ecija.

There is an iron and a coal trench in the province abundant soil and superior quality. The Móntescos brings to Boñgabon a lot of gold under 22 carats, which they exchange with the mayor. Industry there is almost none; the only factory of any importance is that of indigo, both dry and liquid, or tintaron; he has a reputation on the Manila market.

The seasons, in Nueva-Ecija, are the same as in the other provinces on the coast of Luzon; we feel earthquakes like all over the island, and thunder there is very strong. The temperature is similar to that of Tondo, and one experiences the changes of rain and drought that belong to these latitudes.

This province is called, by its position, to fill a a very important role: for, on the one hand, it communicates easily with Manila Bay, being close to the Laguna de Bay; on the other, it has ports on the Pacific Ocean; it is near, by its northern end, to the sea of China, and finally on the eastern side it is related to provinces we talked about. We could divide it into three parts, each of which would form a large province, which would make it easier to reduce wild tribes who inhabit it and exploit its entire territory.

PROVINCE OF NUEVA-BISCAYA.

This province was newly created because the territory of which it is composed was formerly part of that of Cagayan; we felt the need to separate it because the alcalde, having under his administration too much extended country, visited this part too rarely, which as a result of this species of abandonment, was not cultivated as it should have been. As a result, the inhabitants themselves sought separation, and the governor Don Louis Lardizabal, having regard to their request. In the year 1839 he created this province to which he gave the name of Nueva Biscaya, from the Spanish province where he had taken birth, imitating in that what General Aguilar had when he formed Nueva Ecija, part of the high Pampanga.

Nueva Biscaya is bounded on the north by the Cagayan, to the south and east by Nueva-Ecija, and to the west by the New Province and Pangasinan. It contains 14 pueblos, namely:

Ylagon.	692 tributos,	3,460 hab.
Aritao.	263	1,315
Dupax.	516	2,580
Bambang.	600	3,000
Bayombong. . . } Lumaban. . . . }	582	2,910
Bagabag.	225	1,125
Carig. . . . . } Camarag. . . . }	482	2,410
Añgadanan.	248	1,240
Cauayan. . . . . } Calanusian. . . . }	505	2,525
Gamuy. . . . . } Furao. . . . . }	333 ⅓	1,668
		22,233 hab.

All these pueblos are also poor and produce a few things; we see from the table above that they are poorly inhabited. In recent years, however, we have grow tobacco, and it is to him that the province owes the little life she enjoys; it is on its territory that the river of Allo is born, and she is watered by a few others still, but of little importance. Regardless of the productions it offers in common with all the other provinces, it does not have much special; gold and tobacco are the most abundant. These are the wild inhabitants of the mountains who collect the gold, which they sell to the alkalde and to the indio villages.

This province is still too new for us to can describe it with some accuracy; but, although located in the middle of the land and therefore not but it will become a very important day. Its inhabitants are not distracted, like the others, fishing and shipping, will devote more time to agriculture and industry.

PROVINCE OF CAVITE.

This province, near Manila, is located in part on the bay and commanded by a military leader wearing the title of governor and squire (gobernador y castellano), and which at the same time fulfills the functions of alkalde mayor; he is assisted by a lieutenant of justice, charged with collecting the tributes.

Cavity is bounded on the north by Manila Bay and the province of Tondo, to the east by part of Laguna and the province by the name, to the south by the province of Batangas and to west by the sea.

The position of this province gives it great importance, although, in this respect, it comes only after the province of Tondo in which is located the capital of all the Philippines; she could have a lot more great still, given the ease of its communications with the capital, the bay and the sea which bathes its coasts. The neighborhood of Laguna de Bay is also very advantageous in this respect; she is unfortunately infested with thieves. Here are the names of 11 pueblos it contains:

Puerto de Cavite.	406 tributos,	530 hab.
San Roque.	2,549	11,745
Cavite Viejo.	1,223	5,115
Bacoor..	1,679	8,595
Imus.	2,406	12,030
Silang.	1,682	8,410
Indang.	2,302	11,510
Marigondon.	1,755	8,775
Naic.	670	3,350
Santa Cruz de Malabon. . .	1,257	6,185
San Francisco de Malabon.	1,690	8,450
		84,495 hab.

Cavite, capital of the province, was so named because that it forms a hook which is called *cauit* in tagal language; others call it *Tangvay*, which means a tip of land that goes into the sea. It's a place of pretty well fortified war and the governor's residence from the province; it is located a few leagues from Manila, in the southern part of the bay and in a cove to which she gave her name. That's where met the galleons, laden with gold and silver, on their return from the New Spain. Cavité is the arsenal where are built the armed buildings of the colony and from where are took out the frigate San Fernando and the brig the Realista; but for a long time this arsenal and its beautiful sites of construction are well out of their former splendor. There is also the church, the barracks, a convent and a hospital ; its garrison consists of an infantry battalion, of an artillery picket and sailors in the service of faluas or boats of the colony. Recently there has been a cigar factory that will add a lot to its importance commercial. It is in this port that ships come to take shelter during the bad season; the houses of the city are almost all built of stone, which, together with sandy terrain on which it is built, increases considerably the heat; she enjoys such a reputation of health, that it is in Cavite that convalescents from Manila go to complete their recovery. A breeze pleasant there spreads a sweet freshness in the morning and in the evening.

The province of Cavite is the only one of all the Philippines where we could get a little grape vine, what you need attribute to its sandy soil; everywhere else the tests have remained so far without success.

The territory of this province being all in plains, the rivers are, of course, of little importance; it is not rich, but it could be much more so if the inhabitants wanted to engage in work; but they are, in general, careless and lazy, and the result is that Cavity provides more criminal justice to criminals than any other province. On the other hand, the facility communications gives them a thousand ways to escape to the vindication of the laws, and all the efforts of the government have not yet been able to eradicate this wound.

Regardless of the port of Cavité, there are still in this province, the province of Limbones, located at the entrance of the bay, and the cove of Canacao, where there are o to 4 fathoms of water. The so-called Picos de Loro mountains are remarkable for the distance to which they are distinguished at sea; south from the entrance of the bay, it is towards them that navigators go to recognize the pass.

Rice, sugar, indigo and coffee are the main ones products of the province of Cavity and those which are the objects of his business. The coffee of Tierra Alta and that of the surroundings from the pueblo de Silang are of a remarkable quality; they pass to be superior to that of Moka. There is trade cattle, such as cows, sheep and pigs, and the fishing is one of the great resources of the inhabitants.

Cavity produces a large quantity of mulberry trees, especially in the neighborhood of Parañaque. It is where we took the cuttings that were used on our plantations from Sampaloc, whom we sent, to the King's Garden, in Paris, several beautiful samples, kept without watering, and under a small volume, by a new process. This when we return to France, four years after shipped, that we learned that our cuttings have arrived in good condition. As for the process we come from to allude, we believe that it can be helpful to do so to know here because it can apply to many plants it has not

been possible so far to bring to Europe with great expense in water and transport costs; it consists of introducing a bundle of cuttings into a fragment of banana trunk, perforated in its center until the root and in which we introduce a little very light topsoil. The idea had come to us because we had noticed that, even exposed to the sun, the banana trunk kept its moisture for more than six months. By medium, the plants could be shipped inexpensively more interesting from distant lands.

Various species are still cultivated in this province of vegetables, ajonjoli, wheat sent to Manila, and a wide variety of fruits, especially mangoes, dates, pineapples, watermelons, oranges and silts.

The pastries of Cavité enjoy a deserved reputation, especially that which is called bread of Cana; we also makes excellent jams.

The festivals that are celebrated there every year once attracted a large part of the population of Manila; they are less crowded today.

PROVINCE OF LAGUNA.

The boundaries of the province of Laguna are, to the north, Tondo and Nueva-Ecija; to the south, the provinces of Batangas and Tayabas; to the southeast and east, the Pacific Ocean, and, at the west, the province of Cavité. Bay Lake, which gave him the name it bears, occupies almost as much space as the land.

This province is also rich in its products and his business; his lake is perpetually crisscrossed with boats who enter the big rivers with which he communicates or comes out. This lake is one of the main sources of its prosperity; because, as we have seen more high, it gives birth to the Pasig River which bathes the walls of Manila and flows into the bay.

In the province of Laguna, the mountains and the plains alternate and throw there the most admirable variety: the vegetation is magnificent and of the most luxuriant wealth; scenic spots, delightful perspectives are hitting everywhere the landscape, but it is especially the navigation of the lake during the beautiful season that offers beauties that do not end up maybe in no other country in the world, beauties that still note the singularity of the objects that one meets there with each step. Foreigners arriving in Manila rush, usually ask the governor for permission to make this excursion; because they are not allowed to enter the interior of the country before obtaining it. We will notice; on this occasion, that no foreigner can settle or even reside in Manila without permission emanating from the monarch himself. However, those who present in Manila without knowing this use are getting quite easily from the governor a provisional permission; in addition, recent orders have ruled that any national or foreign industry or profession would be deemed useful to the colony could settle there freely; but, in spite of this, one always continues to observe the old usage.

Laguna is one of the most populous provinces of the Philippines, and its inhabitants are, without question, the most beautiful of the archipelago; there are some villages among those whose lake edges are covered, where one would be hard-pressed to quote an ugly figure: this circumstance is attributed to its neighborhood from the capital. Although one of the smaller provinces in the island of Luzon, it is rich and

industrious; she occupies this what is called, in the country, the bend of the elbow that forms this island, and its immense lake is equidistant, on one side, of the Pacific Sea and, on the other hand, of the China Sea, by the bay: it therefore commands very important positions. Its pueblos are thirty-three, namely:

Pagsanjan.	933 tributos,	4,665 hab.
Lumbang.	1,121	5,605
Loñgos.	337	1,685
San Antonio.	295	1,475
Paete.	661	3,305
Paquil.	367	1,835
Pañgil.	578	2,890
Siniloan.	1,157	5,785
Mabitac..	342	1,710
Santa Maria.	223	1,115
Santa Cruz.	1,691	8,455
Pila.	1,000	5,000
Calauan.	399 ½	1,998
Bay.	445	2,225
Los Baños..	320	1,600
Calamba.	905	4,525
Cabuyao.	1,152	5,760
Santa Rosa.	1,058	5,290
Biñan.	1,707 ½	8,537
San Pedro Ternusan. . .	597 ½	2,988
Jalajala..	254 ½	1,272
San Diego.	178 ½	893
Pililla.	478 ½	2,392
Tanay.	953	4,765
Baras.	293	1,465
Morong..	1,327	6,635
Binañgonan.	1,174	5,870
Angono..	235 ½	1,178
Cavinti.	676	3,380
Majayjay.	2,545	12,725
Lilio.	1,356	6,780
Nagcarlang.	1,822	9,110
Magdalena.	948	4,740
		167,653 hab.

The alkalde mayor of Laguna resides in Pagsanjan, pueblo not far from Manila and from where you can get of time, to the capital, down the river on which it is located; everywhere the roads are bad and the very difficult communications at all times for

cars. The streets of Pagsanjan are fired, and many its houses are stone and covered with tiles; others are in nipa alone but most are built in wood and nipa: everything in this pueblo breathes ease. The inhabitants are, for the most part, mestizos from the neighborhood belong and cultivate them with care; this are they, again, who do almost all the trade of Santa Cruz market, which is held once a week. It is a pueblo located 4 leagues from Pagsanjan: this one has a church and a convent, for one seldom finds one without the other; her royal house (casa real) is well built; that's the way call the house inhabited by the alkalde and which is often the only pueblo built of stone; she recognizes herself, besides, easily by the sentinel who stands at the door, the alcalde having a guard from twenty to twenty-five men caught among the natives of the place: it is in the royal house that foreigners almost always receive this hospitality, distinctive character of Spanish generosity. The alcalde of Laguna, don Prudencio Santos, a very distinguished man who ruled for twelve years this beautiful province, is known to all travelers who go to the lake; his affability, the nobility of his manners have made him cherish his people as of all people who had relations with him. We remember always with pleasure happy moments that we we spent in his house during the trip we made with Adolphe Barrot, then French Consul in the Philippines. That we would like to retrace here the interesting excursions to which we surrendered; parts of hunting that we did in this province and especially the sinking so spicy that we took in a picturesque site, where the Bumbangan River, on which we were embarked, flows between two walls of a mountain, separated doubtless by some terrestrial revolution, since they present as two symmetrical walls, covered with the richest vegetation and whose age-old trees are the home of countless monkeys and the magnificent hornbill (*calao*) who loves to perch on their summit.

In the very center of the pueblo of Pagsanjan springs a ferruginous water source, and on the other side of the river is a thermal spring: there a reservoir of 6 to 8 feet square is covered with a small house; a trickle of warm water about 4 inches in diameter pours into this big bathtub the water we need and that we have holds by closing the external outlets. This source enjoys a great reputation for healing a large number of diseases; and a crowd of people there return each year to this effect; convalescents are sent there of the military hospital. In one of the walks from Pagsanjan to the shores of the lake, we visited a hydrosulfurous source, near the called earth point Quinagrupagan. The indios gave this water the name *mabahong tubig*, or stinking water.

The air is very healthy throughout this province, and in the thermometer reading sometimes goes down to 18° Reaumur. The rainy season is very bad because the rivers overflow and that the lake itself contributes to make the floods more with the sea, by the Pasig, although large enough number, becoming clogged day by day more by the sand accumulated at the mouths of the river.

Only one river comes out of Laguna de Bay, and it's hard to understand suffice to get rid of the overflow of waters brought to it by all the rivers and all streams flowing into it; it is true that its surface is so large, that a considerable amount of water evaporates during the dry season: but this unique river, the Pasig, is full, at once, of charm and majesty; its green banks are dotted with Indian huts, interspersed with calderias, small shops where the Indian comes to rest and refresh himself in the shade of tufts of beautiful bamboos the tops fall into graceful plumes. As we go walks along the banks

of the river, houses of pleasure elegant and many stores, various merchandise depots, announce the approach of the capital.

The course of the Pasig is about 6 leagues; it goes out by six mouths of the lake, and before arriving at lamer, he receives, from a side, several tributaries, while, on the other, various arms stand out. One of the most important of these leaves him at the height of Pundacan and will throw himself into the bay at Paranaque, almost opposite Cavite. It is he who protects Manila on the south-east side, this city being defended in the east by the bay, to the north by the Pasig itself, and to the west by fortifications.

The Pasig is one of the most fish-rich rivers in the island of Luzon, and the fish it feeds is excellent; we fishing a large amount of fluviátiles with which one Fattens the ducks raised in Paleros. This river is, in general, deep, and it would be easy to make it navigable, even for big buildings, if the bridge that joins the fortress to the commercial part of the city did not prevent them to pass; its bar is about 16 feet deep, and one is currently working on digging it by means of a boat carrying a steam engine for this purpose. As to from the lake, they also have bars above which there is very little water; but nothing would be easier than to to open a passage sufficient for steamboats which, themselves, would not draw much water, and because medium, the bay would be in perpetual communication with the lake and the entire province.

Among the rivers flowing into the lake, we notice Binan, Santa Rosa, Santa Cruz, Bumbangan, Baras, the Tanay, which are the most useful to trade. There are people who claim that the river that waters the valley of Lanantin and so-called Binangonan of Lampong, a very considerable river, which flows into the Pacific Ocean, near the pueblo of the same name, also leaves Lake Bay. If was so, the South Sea would communicate with the sea from China across the island of Luzon; but other people ensure, on the contrary, that this river has its source in the province of Nueva-Ecija.

The water of Laguna de Bay, that because of its vast expanse we have also called the Bay Sea, which he justifies by the hurricanes that are rife at certain times, is gentle and good to drink. The circumference of the lake is irregular, and we do not agree on its extent. Its largest diameter is 15 to 18 leagues and its average depth of 15 to 16 fathoms; but while there are places where find no background, there are others where there is only strong little water. We had a terrible hurricane one day, and we are convinced that we are running just as much dangers in the China Sea: large trees were uprooted, water-driven buffaloes, and many boats, even praos, which are very large, died. The surface of Lake Bay is dotted with several small islands, among which we will mention that of Tatin, which is about 8 miles long from north to south, and 4 meters wide from east to west. It is located almost in the middle of the lake and southeast of the mouth of the Pasig; it forms, to the north, Strait of Quinabutasan, through which one passes to surrender to Jalajala's house which belongs today to Messrs. Vidie, who bought it from M. de la Gironnière, French like them. The colony owes great recognition to these gentlemen for the impulse they gave to the culture houses. It is between the tip of Jalajala and the island that when you come from Santa Cruz you go to this house: another strait, about 2 leagues from wide, is formed by the tip of Jalajala and the coast of Pila. He leads to what is called the Rinconada (nook) of Siniloan, not to be confused with Rinconada de Morong, name of a neighborhood pueblo.

The surroundings of the lake are very rich in game of all kinds, and the lake itself is covered with wild ducks. The property of MM. Vidie, that we can look at, in some way, like a model farm, contains woods where hunt deer and wild boar; we meet, from all sides, horses and oxen that the owners sell to Manila merchants. The lake is very rich in fish and supplies daily fish market Manila; its edges are inhabited by crocodiles, among which there are huge ones, witness the one that took and killed one day M. de la Gironniere, the intrepid inhabitant of Jalajala; it is especially in the Quinabutasan Strait they are the most numerous. Moreover, crocodiles are not the only animals malfaisants found on the lake; he is infested canoes mounted by thieves.

The island of Tanin is inhabited by a species of bats of enormous size.

In the Cayman Islands, so named from the large number of these animals that we find there, we see a deep lake that was probably once the crater of a volcano: this island, located near Los Banos, is very small.

Among the boats that roam the lake, we notice the *bancas*, which are pirogues of different sizes, formed, like those in Manila, in one piece very light wood. It's the little ones who every morning, bring the fish to the capital, where they arrive with such rapidity that they seem to fly on the water; other bring forages and fruits, and in particular huge bunches of bananas; other bancas, called Pasig, because it is in this pueblo that they shelter, serve to cross the lake: they are covered with a kind of roof very light called cayan, built of bamboo, and are paddled by four men under the leadership of a boss placed in back. Two huge bamboos are attached to both sides and prevent them from driving into the water. We have hardly believe that foreigners dare to embark on these narrow and frail nacelles, so different from everything they have until then, to make a journey sometimes very perilous; we must not forget that, although full of water, they can not sink. How often do we trust the probity of a few indios we knew we are we not launched, by the darkest night, on this huge sea of Bay, to get us where homework sacred of our profession called us!

There are some bancas, a little bigger than those, which can, using a bamboo, hoist a small sail: the relief that she provides relieves the Indian paddlers, that one however, never heard of complaining of fatigue. A little tobacco and some buyos are enough for them; because even when they do not have rice, they do not miss the whole day. The guilalos are large bancas, often very elegantly painted, which belong to private individuals and most of which is occupied by a species narrow room, perfectly closed by behind, known in Manila as conchas, because that the glass panes are replaced by shells very light and almost transparent; they go to sails and rowing. The cascos are sailboats more large again, from 10 to 20 tons. We find still on all the lakes and rivers of the Philippines. The cascos of Lake Bay are used to bring to Manila the various goods that the pueblos of the province send there, and, among others, the distilled spirits of the coconut on behalf of the government. But the boats the most remarkable and that do not leave the lake, because being loaded, they draw too much water to be able to to cross the bars, these are the so-called paraos, real ships, particular to the country, whose dimensions are those of the biggest bricks, and which carry goods and passengers who go all the Manila weeks at the Santa Cruz market. We do not can not imagine anything more picturesque than the aspect of these large boats, whose masts rise to a considerable height and each support a sail of a colossal dimension, made of dry palm leaves. It is by closely examining those ships that can be formed a fair idea of

the natural talent of indios and resources they possessed before the conquest of the Philippines by the Spaniards. There is nothing like what is customary to see in Europe. The shape of these buildings has some compared with that of Chinese shampans. Ropes are made of abaca; anchors, which have only one hook, are incorruptible; they are supported by made cables with the black filaments of the known palm tree, in Manila, under the name cabonegro. These cables replace our chains of iron and resist much better to the continual action of water, which has no influence on them. At first sight, you'd think they're horsehair. Most nails that enter in the structure of the boat are wooden and are even often replaced by artistically rattan ties braided. Two kinds of places are reserved for different passengers who embark on these ships. The more expensive are those of a species of poop that divides in two rooms closed by conchas. Every traveler must bring in advance everything he needs in the path. This is where we often have fun to observe what was happening in the second places, that is to say in a large square room placed on the bridge, where the indios, the mestizos and even the Chinese live together, some spending the day and night playing, others sleeping in their hammocks hanging on the floor, others cooking rice and sinigou. Not the slightest noise heard, not the slightest dispute arises between rival individuals of interest and aiming for the same purpose, and this though the crossing sometimes lasts several days! This conduct, we must admit, seemed to us admirable of the two sides of these buildings extend two kinds of appendages floating at the end of which are attached long and large bamboos, thus forming two long squares which serve to support this enormous mass on the water, make it safer, but also more difficult to maneuver.

The goods are placed, some in the hold, which is shallow, the others near these wings or batangas of which we come, talk. This is where the cattle are put, the poultry, coconuts, bananas and other fruits, as well as that tinajas of coconut oil. Inside, we place the rice, coffee and other commodities from the province in sacks braided with buri leaves. The hull of the ship is neither coated with copper, neither tarred, but coated with a species sealant, white, waterproof, called gala-gala. Sailing, which is hoisted as soon as the passengers, arriving in their bancas, boarded, is brought at the end of the trip; also, when the weather gets bad, the ship is often helpless.

The province of La Laguna is very mountainous. Above fromSililan, we find the mountains of Cabooau and Darrastan; south of Pila are those of San Pablo, Ilio, Nagcarlang and Mount Mâjayjay, which borders on the province of Tayabas: the Cavinti Mountains are located in the north-west and at southwest of Pagsanjan. All these mountains are crowned thick forests and inhabited by a line of animals. Nowhere do we find so many birds. We would seek in vain to share with our readers the delicious sensations that we experienced through this admirable country to go to the shores of the Pacific Ocean. Arrived almost at the top of the mountains, we are suddenly, sometimes in a picturesque valley, sometimes on a rich plain, covered with aromatic herbs that embellish in the distance the air we breathe. There a sweet reverie involuntarily seizes the spirit; but it's in vain that we would like to extend it, the objects we are surrounded by interrupt him incessantly, in spite of himself. Here is the ôiseaume who flies buzzing and will nestle in the chalice of flowers, from which he sucks honey; there is the doe or the fleeting fawn pursued by the buffalo; further, the pork forest gets up scared of the sound of our footsteps and rushes quickly in front of us. And it was not just nature animated that kept us from staying for too long absorbed in our reflections, they were bridges of bamboo boldly hanging by the

industrious hand of native; these were the magnificent viewpoints that were at each step as we advanced, and the most striking perhaps of which is the vast lake of Bay, stretching down to our feet, with its banks covered with rich and numerous villages.

The lands of this province are, in general, well cultivated, and it is especially the coconut tree to which the inhabitants lavish all their care. We will enjoy this opportunity to enter, about this palm tree, into a few interesting details. It deserves to be taken care of, because the tree and its fruit are for the indios of invaluable usefulness, by the large number of different uses to which they use them.

The coconut, even without it being put in the ground, provided it is placed in a cool place, begins, after four to five months, to present the first traces of germination. In the interior of the nut and at its the upper part, an apple species is formed, called *Tumbum* by the indios. This is where the bud gets spawn a passage, and this coconut, separated from the tree and delivered to itself, do not delay in giving a stem a foot high: it is then that we plant it; it continues to rise, and at the end from ten to fifteen years old it gives fruit. As soon as he has began to produce, we can draw the seve called tuba, which is made the brandy, the wine and the vinegar of coconut. For this purpose, we make, at a certain time of the year, cuts in the stems that must yield fruit, and we suspend below a cylinder of bamboo called *bonbon* who receives the seve or *tuba* that men practiced this operation go, twice a day collect amount at the top of the tree.

When these men are alone or in small numbers, they climb on the coconut tree using natural nicks offered by the trunk; if there are, on the contrary, many, they communicate with each other by bamboo and pour into the big bamboo they carry on their back the *tuba* they find. This liquor, thus collected, is delivered to the fermentation and then distilled, and the wine as well as the eau-de-vie that they must be sold exclusively to the government. The administration, having taken delivery of the liquid in Manila, distributes it to various offices [estanquillos) in the provinces. This should not be understood rest, only Luzon; because, in the Bisaye, the sale of this product, like that of tobacco, is free; but according to all appearances, one and the other will soon be submitted to the tax.

Let's continue to list the different uses that the indios make with the coconut tree. The nut, eaten in kind, provides a nice food to them; the water it contains is refreshing, diuretic and very good in dysentery, disease in which our compatriot, Dr. Genu, administered it often successfully; the flesh of the nut, pressed, gives oil; the trunk is used in construction of houses, and leaves in their cover: some of these same leaves are woven together and made into rainwear that withstands the strongest rain.

When the coconut is dry, its water acquires a virtue more decidedly laxative, and it is then also that one extracted from its flesh the oil to burn, which forms an object of export rather important. We make a large quantity, by cooking, in the village of Santa Cruz. In the Bisaya, maceration of the nut in the sun provides the oil known as *caracoas*. The indio is not limited to eat the raw coconut, it makes jams, stews and mix with rice. With the shell, he makes vases of all kinds, large and small spoons, mussels to sink the dulces or jams that the indios call *panocha*, and of which he consumes so enormous quantity in the Philippines. After chewing a little of these jams at the end of their meal, they dilute in water, that they drink; because they do not use

wine in eating. The solid part of the coconut being burned gives a very good vegetable black. With the green coconut, called *muda*, we make a decoction that gives firmness to the black color of the fabrics.

The nut is wrapped, outside, with filaments called by the natural *bonot*, and of which one makes ropes that last much more than those of abaca and do not rot like them to the rain; they are even stronger than those that we do in Europe with hemp. The filaments with which they are made is used to caulk ships; indios still make some kinds of waterproof coats and pants. Nothing is more curious than to see them so dressed, and the head covered with the vast hat to which they gave the name of *salacot*. They absolutely remind the Robinson's figure on his island. (See the atlas.)

As we said above, the sheet can serve, like the *nipa*, to cover the houses; of its fibers one makes brooms and they can replace the rattan every time that a long duration is not necessary. The stem of the coconut tree serves as fuel and the indios even make them pillars for their homes; finally like everything in this tree has to to have its utility, there is not until the root that is not employed in medicine; it is a remedy against dyssentery.

A lot of indigo is made in Laguna province: the banks of the Bumbangan River are covered plantations of indigotiers; the vats placed at the entrance of villages indicate the locations where this manufacture takes place. The indigo of Laguna enjoys the highest reputation. The sugar is also abundant in the province, where still grow padi, cocoa, bonga, wheat, cotton, the abaca, but in lesser quantity. Mongos are a kind of peas that are kept dry. Forests provide woods of all kinds and among others the one that serves to make the bancas.

Other objects that are made in the province are buri hats, which, though less good and less beautiful that those of Balinat are no less solid; of the precious mats, stockings, of which those of Biuangonan have reputation in Manila.The beautiful mats of Morong are strong estimated. Pa'ita, a charming village on the west bank of the lake, manufactures, as well as those around it, chairs and beds: we are really surprised to see that these indios, with the small number of tools they have at their disposal, can achieve such good results. We will not leave the village of Pa'ita without noticing that it is here, as at Paquil and Bangil, that we find the most beautiful Indian women from the province: they compete with those of Pampanga.

We met on the Jalajala property, unequivocal traces of the existence of iron; we have some reported some samples. Other minerals of the provinces are copper, plaster stones, alum and sulfur.

Regardless of the dwelling of Jalajala, which we have already spoken, we can still see that of Calahuan, belonging to Mr. Inigo, and that of Calamba, which belongs to Religious of the Order of Saint Dominic. A rich industrialist, Don Domingo Rojas, has a gunpowder factory in this province.

CHAPTER XIII.
FOLLOWING THE GEOGRAPHY OF THE PROVINCES.

Batangas. - Tayabas. - Camarines-North. - Camarines-south. - Albay.

PROVINCE OF BATANGAS.

This province, which is also known today as Balayan or Taal, was formerly called Comintang; it is limited to north by Laguna and by the province of Cavite, to the east by the province of Tayabas, to the west by the China Sea, and south by the Mindoro Strait. She stands out especially by the affability and kindness of its inhabitants, by their Gracious manners and their beautiful physiognomy. They like the music and singing, and indulge in poetry: it's up to them that we owe the first songs that we called, from their name, comintangs. Its jurisdiction extends over fourteen pueblos, to know:

Batangas.	5,476 tributos,	17,380 hab.
Bauan	4,759	23,795
Taal.	6,524	32,620
Calaca.	723	3,615
Balayan.	3,580	17,900
Lian.	450	2,250
Nasugbu.	575	2,875
San José.	2,057	10,285
Lipa.	3,468	17,340
Tanauan.	2,075	10,360
Santo Tomas..	1,100	5,500
San Pablo.	3,449 ½	17,248
Rosario.	2,650	13,250
Ibaan.	1,304	6,520
		180,958 hab.

The capital of this province is Batangas, seaport located in the cove of this name, and on the Strait of Mindoro. This city was founded in 1581; she is tall, quite regularly built; its streets are spacious, its royal house, dwelling of the alcalde mayor, and several private houses are beautiful; it is located on the left bank of the river Calumpang. It may become a very important day by its position because the Mindoro Strait serves as a gateway to a large number of ships coming and going between straits so frequented, Basilan and San Bernardino.

The uneven terrain of this province is volcanic; we breathe a salubrious air; his productions are wheat, rice, excellent coffee, indigo, corn, a little pepper, very fine cotton, vegetables and fruits, cocoa, wild nutmeg. Its meadows are enamelled with flowers, around which flutter countless birds and bees that give honey in abundance.
The broken breezes that reign in this rugged terrain bring to travelers the sweet scent of a crowd aromatic plants, among which are distinguished mint. Pastures are very good in this province; they feed beautiful herds of oxen and horses.

The roads in the Batangas are hardly practicable only in good weather. We stayed there in the season rain, and, although mounted on a very vigorous buffalo, we saw the moment when we were going to be engulfed in the vase, we and our mount. The country, moreover, is very picturesque. The trays that we discover by visiting the shores of the lake at Batangas are very remarkable and alternate with deep valleys where the day hardly penetrates to through the trees and bamboos that dominate them, and whose rustle, when the wind agitates them, sounds far away, mixed the cries of the monkeys and the Morning call of the hornbill, concert wild, the only one to be heard in these vast solitudes. Often also the road is crossed by torrents that rain changes into formidable rivers, while the time of the drought, they present only thin nets of water.

The freshness that usually prevails in these campaigns gives a lot of activity to wheat growing and a vigorous very great to the vegetation of the rice; we would often believe transported, as if by magic, to Spain and the rich plains of the kingdom of Valencia.

The main rivers that water this province are those of Baytigbug, Obispo, Gemil, Dacan, Caon, Bonbon; the latter leaves the lake of this name and throws in Balayan's Cove, after a 10-mile course. This river abounds in fish of a delicious taste: there fishing, among others, lesabalo, species of species, which finds also in the lake. This fishing is done in a whole way particular: the naturals form, at a certain time of the year, in the river, dams (estacadas) at medium of big bamboo. The fish, who come down with rapidity of the flow of water, come up against these barriers and make a jump to cross them, but they fall on an esplanade also made of bamboo and placed above the surface of the water; the fishermen, who are on the lookout, then come and kill them with sticks: they are so abundant, that a fish that weighs 5 to 6 pounds is sold, in the neighboring village, only 2 real or 25 sous.

The rivers of Manguiano, Jagonoy, Santa Rita and from Calampang threw themselves into Batangas Cove, where the ships find shelter and a good anchorage because it is forbidden by the mountains of Calampang province and by those of the tip of Matorot, which we call the mountains Bañoy. The mouth of the Rosario River and that of Calampic, near the tip of Lobo, also offer good anchorage, but less sure than the first.

It is in the province of Batangas that is the lake of Taal or Bonbon, situated a few leagues from the bay of Batayan, with which he communicates by the river of which we have spoken. He is very deep and very rich in fish; but it offers more remarkable is a small island placed in its center and in the middle of which sinks the crater of the old volcano that still burns and you can see the smoke from far away. At the bottom of this crater, and in the middle of several flaming mouths, there is another small lake the waters, analyzed by the chemist Lopez, were found composed of sulfuric acid. This same scientist, having descended in the crater, assured us of having found a huge regular block of iron sulphide, others less considerable and a lot of pumice stones. This lake is so big and so deep, that rowboats could navigate there, and it is bordered by a plain ground and wide enough that we could to walk there by car; this lake has no communication with the big outdoor lake.

Batangas is subject to earthquakes that have sometimes destroyed several villages. The eruption of 1754 sent ashes to Manila; there is no doubt that Lake Taal owes its existence to one of these convulsions of nature.

The mountains of this province, generally quite high, mostly present four more remarkable peaks than others. These are the Batulao, located west of Lake Taal; Malaraya, east of the same lake; the Janaojanao and the Lobo, near the tip of this name: from their peaks one discovers the China Sea. The vegetation on these mountains, very active on the side of the sunset, is almost nil on the opposite side;
they provide timber and cabinetry and sandal; they contain iron mines that is, we say, of a quality equal to that of Angat, of which we have spoken in describing the province of Bulacan; finally we find, in the villages of Banan and Casaysay, vestiges its center and in the middle of which sinks the crater of the old volcano that still burns and you can see the smoke from far away. At the bottom of this crater, and in the middle of several flaming mouths, there is another small lake the waters, analyzed by the chemist Lopez, were found composed of sulfuric acid. This same scientist, having descended in the crater, assured us of having found a huge regular block of iron sulphide, others less considerable and a lot of pumice stones. This lake is so big and so deep, that rowboats could navigate there, and he is bordered by a plain ground and wide enough that we could to walk there by car; this lake has no communication with the big outdoor lake. Batangas is subject to earthquakes that have sometimes destroyed several villages. The eruption of 1754 sent ashes to Manila; there is no doubt that Lake Taal owes its existence to one of these convulsions of nature.

The mountains of this province, generally quite high , mostly present four more remarkable peaks than others. These are the Batutao, located west of Lake Taal; Malaraya, east of the same lake; the Janaojanao and the Lobo, near the tip of this name: from their peaks one discovers the China Sea. The vegetation on these mountains, very active on the side of the sunset, is almost nil on the opposite side;
they provide timber and cabinetry and sandal; they contain iron mines that is, we say, of a quality equal to that of Angat, of which we have spoken in describing the province of Bulacan; finally we find, in the villages of Banan and Casaysay, vestiges announce the existence of a gold mine formerly exploited.

These solitudes are populated by buffaloes, deer, wild boars, monkeys, porcupines, wild pigs, pigeons, turtledoves and birds of all kinds.

The commerce of the province of Batangas consists mainly of in the products we have already listed, as well as wheat that is brought to the market of Manila, in one considerable amount of rice, in livestock and particularly oxen, whose flesh, thanks to its good pastures, can to support the comparison with that of the animals of Europe.
The country feeds a lot of horses, which are so accustomed to to go through the mountains and the bad roads, which they make the greatest services to the inhabitants: we can not to figure with what security we travel, mounted on one of these horses and by the most detestable roads; they lead you without you having to direct them, and if they slide, they stop their fall by bending the knee as mountain goats; if, by an extraordinary case, they fall, they prevent any accident by keeping a straight posture.

The industry of this same province is limited to spinning cotton and the abaca it produces itself, and to form tissues to clothe its own inhabitants, exporting the surplus to neighboring provinces: there are also skins of oxen and buffaloes, which are

sent to Manila. Fishing is one of the main resources of the inhabitants of Batangas, and from which they derive the most benefit.

The Batangueños are affable and industrious, and we read these qualities on their physiognomy which accords well with the beauty of the country they inhabit and with the sweetness of fragrant air breathe there.

The island of Maricaban, located in the middle of the Mindoro Strait, at a short distance from the tip of Calampang, as well as small neighboring islets, depend on this province; she is sadly famous for the tragic end of one of the first governors Philippine Islands, Gomez Perez Dasmarinas, who, in leaving for an expedition against Ternate, was assassinated, in October 1593, by the Chinese who rowed in his boat. It is between this island and Puerto Galera that pass most of the ships that during the monsoon of north-east, arriving through the Strait of San Bernardino, recognize the tip of Santiago, in order to surrender either in Manila Bay, on the shores of China.

PROVINCE OF TAYABAS.

The province of Tayabas, whose alkalde mayor also carries the title of governor, is located southeast of Manila: it is bounded on the north by Lampon Bay or Lamon, in the Pacific Ocean, and by the province of Camarines; to the East by the same province of Camarines, to the south by the sea of Mindoro, and to the west by the provinces of Laguna and Batangas. The part of the coast washed by the Pacific Ocean is called by both the natives and the Spaniards Contra Costa. It is in Lamon Bay that you will find the two small islands of Alavate and Cabalate, which are inhabited by savage tribes, some of which maintain relationships with the province they depend on, as well as several other small islands located in the sea of Mindoro.

This province contains the following seventeen pueblos:

Tayabas.	4,283 ½ tributos,	21,418 hab.
Lucban.	2,829 ½	14,147
Saryaya.	1,722 ½	8,614
Tiaon.	692	3,460
Dolores.	450	2,250
Mauban.	1,323	6,615
Atimonan.	1,176	5,880
Gumacà.	1,848	9,240
Pagbilao.	496	2,480
Pitogo.	276	1,380
Macalelon.	155	775
Catanauan.	450	2,250
Mulanay.	305	1,525
Obuyon.	265	1,325
Calauag.	63	315
Apad.	63	315
Guinayangan.	212	1,060
		83,049 hab.

Tayabas, capital of the province, is a considerable city, built in the middle of the land and 5/4 leagues from the river of the same name; its streets are spacious, drawn cordeau, clean and all well paved. Aqueducts distribute water in all the pueblo; many of his houses are in stone, and there are a lot of shops similar to those of Binondo and where the same kind of goods. It is this city which was the theater of the revolt which, in the year 1841, cost the life of a great number of indios; the one who was the leader and who had won to these simple people that he was inspired by Saint Joseph was taken on the banks of the Saryaya River.

The population of Tayabas is very hospitable; she is partly composed of Chinese mestizos living in comfort. We meet, in the evening and in the morning, in the streets, a crowd young girls, a very pleasant turn, going to the fountains flowing in the city, to fill with water the bamboos they carry on their arms, as the soldier wears his rifle. These bamboos, which are 8 or 40 feet long, and the how they are worn give this population a very particular aspect, but that we still find in Lucban and in Mauban, where this system of fountains is adopted as in Tayabas. In the evening, at the time of the cool, all the inhabitants go to the walk to breathe clean air: if so, after the Angelus, a religious comes to pass, everyone hastens to kiss her hand and kneels to receive his blessing; for, in their eyes, every clergyman is both a master and a friend.

This country is, in general, very low and very humid; there is it rains much of the year, and the villages, which are built at the foot of high mountains, are almost constantly saturated with moisture; it results in many diseases, especially stubborn diarrhea, intermittent fevers and the disease known as paperas: the greater precautions are necessary to preserve oneself of these inconveniences. Even during the dry season the dew are extremely abundant and the vegetation is in any time sufficiently watered.

The streams, which are very numerous, become torrents in the rainy season. Independently of the river of Tayabas, there is that of Bifian, who throws himself into the sea, at the northern end of the Gulf of Ragay, and that of Talolon, which has its mouth on the east coast; so that in the rainy season, the Pacific Ocean could easily communicate with this gulf.

This province is crossed, from north to south, by a mountain range following that of neighboring provinces. These mountains, which are claimed to exist some craters of volcanoes, are covered with any species. Hunting could be very plentiful, but the inhabitants have no taste for it; they let live and die the hosts of the forests in perfect tranquility. The bees deposit there a delicious honey; labrujo or wild cock, though smaller than the domestic cock, is very brave in combat; the indios, who know the price, tend to him nets called batin: a domestic cock serves of call; he provokes them; the valiant champion goes to challenge and fall into the net. If he is young, he is trained and he often wins the prize; if he is too old, he falls into the doldrums and dies of sadness. Compared to domestic cock, he has, as we have just said, the body smaller, but longer; the beak is thin, more long and more acute, paws small, but strong, spurs very acute and very long.

We will point out, on this occasion, that the name of labrujo, by which the natives designate this animal, is purely Indian, as well as those of tupa, for sheep; kambing, for kid; usa, for deer; aso, for dogs: this which seems to indicate that these various

animals are indigenous in the country, while horse and beef, which are not not, have kept their Spanish name.

The province of Tayabas does not offer as much importance that it should, its culture and commerce being paralyzed by incursions of the Moros, which gave rise, for to oppose it, at construction, on the banks of the Bay of Mauban, a large number of small forts. In the trip that we did in this province, we visited with the greater interest the vast plantations of coffee and cocoa established by Mr. Pinon, on the edge of the bay and in the site the most picturesque around Mauban. The government encouraged his efforts by giving him a bonus of 35,000 francs. Mr. Pinon told us that Alaval Island produces a large amount of wild coffee, that it is there streams rolling gold and that the inhabitants, who are very peaceful, sometimes came to work in his plantation.

Trade objects in this province are wood of all species, rice, wax, tar, balat and cows; Tian's horses are very famous. Trade of these animals is in the hands of a rich half-caste.

As for what specifically forms the manufacturing industry, the mats of Gumaca and Atimonan are mostly remarkable: we saw some who had the finesse a cotton fabric; they are doubled, and we search for them many in Manila, because we sleep very softly and very fresh. Mauban makes cloths of nipis in large quantity, as well as guinaras large enough; there is at least one craft in each house: also this pueblo enjoys a great deal of ease. We visited it with interest and we received the most cordial hospitality Father Manuel Benitos; because, as we have already said, the convents are, in the villages, real inns where travelers are received with the greatest liberality: their table is always full of fat and and lean. A welcome so full of frankness and cordiality almost always inspired us the most reflections sweet and sincere admiration for these modest men who, so far from their homeland, devote their lives to the happiness of the people and to the perpetual acts of humanity.

In the rest of the province, coarse fabrics are made, and the cotton that is harvested is spun and woven for use inhabitants. Although she is regarded as poor, it is nevertheless self-sufficient and still finds some excess production to be shipped to Manila.

PROVINCE OF CAMARINES NORTE.

This province is located east of Tayabas and northeast of that of Camarines-sud; its northern coast is bathed by the Pacific Ocean, and the southern one, which has barely 15 miles in length, extends to the bottom of the Gulf from Ragay. Several small islets on the north coast, and especially those at the entrance to San Miguel Bay, are under its jurisdiction. It is partly mountainous, but there are also large and fertile plains; she was long tormented by the Moros, who today attack preferably the province of Tayabas; his eleven pueblos are:

Daët.	2,484 tributos,	12,420 hab.
Talisay.	808	4,040
Indang.	1,475	7,365
San Vicente.	527	1,635
Labo.	685	5,445
Paracale.	1,394	6,970
Mambulao.	1,466	7,550
Capalongan.	255	1,275
Sipocot.	628	3,140
Lupi.	555	1,775
Bagay.	257	1,285
		50,650 hab.

Daet is the chief town of the province; it is located on the small river of the same name, which flows into the Pacific Ocean and at the entrance to San Miguel Bay, opposite the one of Canton. Some of his houses are in stone, the others of wood and nipa.

The territory of this province is, in general, united; he there are immense plains that are easily flooded, and their exhalations then cause intermittent fevers: however the months of January and February are there very pleasant. Besides, there are also some mountains in the Camarines Norte; such are the Sierra de Bacacay, las Tétas de Palantuna and the Colassi Mountains. The roads are fairly well drilled and the rivers are crossed by bridges, some of which are stone and some are bamboo, but which are only necessary in the rainy season; the rest of the time, most of these rivers can happen on dry foot.

The plains are very fertile and almost all are cultivated. The rivers are very rich in fish. That of Malatquit, which owes its name to its background, which is clay, has 3 or 4 fathoms of water and rolls gold flakes. La Cabussao, the largest in the province, throws itself into the hedge of San Miguel, after watering a part of the province of Camarines Sur. The other rivers, all of which throw themselves into the Pacific Ocean, are irrelevant.

In the mountain of Bacacay, near Paracalé, there is a gold mine in operation: the metal that is drawn from it is a rather low title; it is used to make jewelry that is parent the wealthy inhabitants of the province. The Mambulao mine provides gold sands, which are washed. Other minerals that this province provides are iron, magnet, stones and marbles of different species.

Rice is one of the main vegetable products of Camarines Norte, which, however, is still obliged to draw neighboring provinces; but the most important of all is the abaca, a species of wild palm which is perfected much by culture. Its fruit is not as beautiful as the one banana; it is acidic and of an unpleasant taste; but the tree is grown only for

leaves whose trunk consists, like that of all exogenous trees. When has reached maturity, is slaughtered and cut by strips, which are passed successively under a blade knife attached to a bar, under which the thong is pressed by means of a very heavy piece of wood attached to the bench by a hinge, and which rises and falls by the play of a piece of bamboo very supple, folded into a bow of circle, attached above the communicating bench, by a rope, with the big piece of wood that compresses the thong. It is using this pressure, repeatedly reiterated on the fragment of the bark of abacà, remove the parenchyma whose filaments are coated: that makes, the abacà is dried, cleaned, sorted and put on the market, and the quantity which returns to the farmer at about piastre is selling 2 piastres on the Manila market.

We also made in this province, silk fabrics and cotton, plain pinas mixed with silk, and are exported gold, flake and balate. Its inhabitants, so-called Vicols are remarkable for their good nature; they are so honest, let them sleep open doors. They wear long hair, lifted from behind and contained by a bright, red, blue, or multiple handkerchief colors, and which forms the turban: it is the use throughout the Bisaya, of which this province is very near. They have, in general, blue shirts or sinamay.

PROVINCE OF CAMARINES SUR.

As its name suggests, this province is located more south than the previous one, between that of Camarines Norte and that of Albay; it is bathed, to the north, by the ocean Pacific and, in the south, by the Mindoro Sea: it did not form formerly only one province with that of the Camarines Norte; reasons for administration separated them. Their name comes from what they used to be built a lot of nipa sheds called in Manila *camarines* (small rooms).

Much more considerable than the one we have just to describe, it contains thirty-six pueblos, of which here are the names and population:

Nueva-Cacerès, Tabuco et Santa Cruz.	2,493 tributos,	12,465 h
Milaor.	1,440	7,200
San Fernando.	467	2,335
Minalabag.	708	3,540
Bula.	288	1,440
Baro.	1,011	5,055
Iriga.	1,300	6,500
Buji.	1,077	5,385
Bato.	354	1,770
Libong.	419	2,095
Polangui.	1,482	7,410
Oas..	2,096	10,480
Nabua.	1,706	8,530
Ligao..	2,672	13,360
Guinobatan.	2,547	12,735
Maoraro.	237	1,135
Camalig.	1,797	8,985
Quipia.	402	2,010
Donsol.	352	1,760
Canaman.	1,179 ½	5,898
Magarao.	1,230 ½	6,152
Bonbon.	771	3,855
Quipayo.	317	1,585
Pagatpat.	143	715
Calabanga.	866	4,330
Camaligan.	947	4,735

Libnanan.	1,566	6,850
Manguering..	122	610
Tinambag..	174	870
Siroma.	80	400
Goa..	479	2,595
Tigaon.	248	1,240
Piti..	79	595
Batobato.	112	560
Pamplona..	100	500
Pasaco.	159	795
		156,055

Burias Island, which is located a short distance from the coast southwest of that province, is subject to its jurisdiction; it was uninhabited for a long time and served as a refuge for the Moros. There are however ports and very good anchorages. This is where we send criminals today to Manila condemned to deportation, and in order to populate it, we relegate women of bad life. Several others small islands, located on the coast, also depend on the Camarines-Sur.

This province is richer than that of the north; she is crossed by the mountain range that runs from north to south, in all the length of the island of Luçon: one finds there however also rich plains fertilized by lakes. Its locals also bear the name of *vicols* and speak a language which is particular to them. Those of the middle class are essentially traders; the lower people love a lot to get into service in the capital, where he goes to find places or to be a commissioner, like the inhabitants of Galicia in Spain or those of Auvergne in France: they are, in general, gentle, obedient and good will.

The chief town of this province is Nueva-Caceres, which only one city of just over 12,000 inhabitants with the two pueblos of Tabuco and Santa Cruz. The alcalde mayor lives in Santa Cruz, in a beautiful royal house. This city is also the seat of the bishop of the spiritual province of Nueva-Caceres; it is fairly regularly built 5 or 6 leagues from the bottom of San Miguel Bay, going to the south: it is watered by the Naga or Santa Cruz River.

The province of Camarines Sur, though low and wet, enjoys a fairly healthy air: there are mists in the months of September and October; the roads are there well drilled and passable for cars in the season dried.

The Naga is the largest river in the province; it is navigable for buildings from 150 to 200 tons. A river comes out of Lake Bato and receives another one it is believed to come from the mountains of Albay; later she gets meets itself to a third from Lake Buhy, and they then take the name of Naga. A fourth, exit Mount Mangirin, inhabited by Montescos, comes to his turn to swell the Naga. In Ligmanan, a fifth river, which descends from the unhealthy mountains of Lupi, meets to the previous ones, and all

together, under the name of Naga or Cabusao, will throw themselves in the bay of San Miguel. If the main arm door, as we said, of pretty big ships, its tributaries are, in turn, navigable for small craft, by means of which one travels a part of the province.

Lake Buhy, located in the eastern part of Camarines and not far from the border of Àlbay, several leagues circumference; that of Bato, which is still a little more large, is in the southwest: both are full of fish and offer great resources to the inhabitants of their shores.

The coasts of these provinces offer several anchorages, especially for small ships, where there are coves where they can take shelter and good rades. On the coast south and in front of Burias, there is the Santao Rock, which is well known to browsers. The bay of San Miguel, formed by the Pacific Ocean, is tall and beautiful: it is, moreover, the only remarkable port that the province possesses.

The mountains are inhabited by brown niggers, smugglers, Negritos and wandering tribes. Mount Isaco, the highest of all and located a little to the north from Lake Buhy, is a volcano that still smokes. It is useless to say that, on all these mountains, we find the same vegetation and the same animals as in the rest of the archipelago; it is claimed that they also contain gold mines.

Rice is grown in this province in such abundance that it is at a low price and is sent for all the provinces neighboring; Abaca is also cheap. There comes a lot of cocoa and we make coconut wine on behalf of the government. Its sinamays are very famous and makes it a great trade, as well as guinaras and other tissues. It maintains great relations with the neighboring provinces of the Bisaya and especially with Iloilo.

PROVINCE OF ALBAY.

The province of Albay was formerly called Ibalon; she forms the southern end of the island of Luzon and ends what we have to say about the part of the archipelago that we have designated as Luzon. It starts at the peninsula of Caramuan, which is part of it, and follows the coast east of Luzon, over a width of 10 miles, until the Donsol River, opposite the island of Ticao; she is limited to the west by the province of Camarines Sur and to the other three by the sea. Catanduanes Island, located to the east of peninsula of Caramuan, belongs to its jurisdiction, as than those of Rapurapu, Pingan, San Miguel, Ticao and Masbate, the latter two on the south side. The point the most southerly of this province forms the northern side from the small strait of San Bernardino. The pueblos it contains are thirty-seven, namely:

Albay..	2,625 tributos,	13,115 hab.
Cagsana..	2,551	12,755
Libog..	518	2,590
Bacacay..	870	4,350
Malilipot.	517	2,585
Tabaco.	2,022	10,110
Malinao..	1,269	6,545
Tivi.	1,043	5,215
Sangay.	198	990
San José.	854	4,270

Lagonoy	776	3,880
Caramuan	292	1,460
Calodbong	334	1,670
Birac	578	2,890
Cabugao	118	590
Bato	487	2,435
Baras	107	535
Viga	505	2,325
Tambongon	68	340
Payo	185	925
Bagamanoc	201	1,005
Pandan	212	1,060
Caramuran	100	500
Manito	151	755
Bacon	1,459	7,245
Gubat	1,492	7,460
Bulusan	1,076	5,580
Magnoc	152	760
Bulan	549	2,745
Juban	372	1,860
Casiguran	749	3,745
Sorsogon	1,176	5,880
Bolaboc	171	855
San Jacinto	330	1,650
Mobo	354	1,770
Balino	133	665
Palanas	157	785
		125,695

The capital of the province of Albay is a city of the same name. name, located near the volcano also called Albay, and about 2 miles from a bay of considerable size: it is large, regularly built; some of his houses are made of stone; we notice the casa reale, the church and its convent, the administration of tobacco and wine. This province being fertile and doing a trade extended, it follows that it is rich; the air is cold and roads crossing it are generally good; we can to travel by car; it owes great improvements at one of his old alcaldes, the governor don José Maria de Peñeranda.

Albay is subject to large and frequent volcanic eruptions because his mountain is in perpetual agitation; his ribs are irregular and generally bad. However, the bay of Albay is quite safe and that of Sorsogon is much better and larger. The latter is located on the northwest coast, opposite the islands of Ticao and Burias; on this bay is placed the village of the same name, where I built, at the time, large ships that made the journey of Acapulco; there were also established rope-making where the abaca was used for the apparatus of the ships.

The mountains that cross this province are a continuation of the long hill of Luzon; they present two remarkable peaks and both volcanic: one, that of Bulusan, is almost

entirely extinguished; the other, that of Albay, of which we have already spoken, being very high, serves as a beacon for travelers. These cordilières are inhabited by Igorrotes and Negritos.

Masbate Island, the largest of those located to the south, is almost uninhabited. That of Ticao, where is the Port of San Jacinto, is separated from the province by a channel. That was where the Manila galleys were heading by the Pacific Sea to New Spain; it was there that they waited for the monsoon to declare itself to leave the Strait of San Bernardino.

As we have announced by beginning to speak of the province of Albay, it is by her that the description ends of the part of this archipelago to which we have given the name of Luçonie. We will now look after of the second part, to which we have retained the name of Bisaye, which is given to him by the natives of the country, known in the Philippines as Bisayas. The division we have made seems all the more rational that it is marked not only by the topographical position places but also by the physical character peoples who inhabit them, by their customs and their language, which are essentially different.

CHAPTER XIV.
FOLLOWING THE GEOGRAPHY OF THE PROVINCES.

From the Bisaye.- Mindoro.- Samar, - Leyte.- The island of Panay.- Its provinces.- Capiz, Ilo-Ilo, Antique.

OF THE BISAYA.

We believe we must repeat here that, under the name of Bisaya, we hear all this part of the archipelago of Philippines which is outside the island of Luzon, that is to say the known islands, under the name of Bisayas or los Pintados (painted men), because, during the conquest of the Philippines by the Spaniards, the inhabitants painted each other bodies of different colors, as can be seen in the atlas: this habit still exists among some tribes inside.

But it is not only by this custom that inhabitants of La Bisaye differ from those of Luzon; the language they speak is not the same either. If the Tagalog, with its various dialects, is that of Luzon, in Bisaya we speak bisaya, which also has its dialects, all reporting to the common strain. The manners and the customs do not differ less than languages.

The natives of Luzon are more agriculturalists; those of Bisaya are more involved in fishing, a natural consequence of their position, inhabiting a large number of islands still wild at inside and which therefore offer more ribs than uncultivated land; also we can say that the Bisayas are born sailors. We believe that these must be regarded as a kind of mixture of the true indios of Luzon with the Malays. We note, in fact, that in their way of dressing, they are getting closer to these: so men generally wear the head covered with a handkerchief folded in a turban; they sometimes leave grow their hair and lift them from behind like the Malays, which the inhabitants of the Luzon. In

some provinces, women wear a place of carpets, a kind of ordinarily red garment, called *patadiong*, closely approximating the *sarong* of the Malays.

The Bisaya comprises twelve provinces, which are, by from north to south, those of Mindoro, Samar, Leyte, Capiz, Cebu, Iloilo, Antique, Negros Island, Caraga, Misamis, Samboanga and Calamianes, to which we will add, by describing them, the Mariana Islands. Some of these provinces consist of one island, and others enclose several; finally two islands, those of Panay and Mindanao contain several provinces.

PROVINCE OF MINDORO.

This province is formed by the big island of Mindoro, by that of Marinduque and by several other small ones, such as Cabras, Luban, Ambil and Camelo, to the north; Verde island, northeast; Maestro di Campo, to the east, and a few South.

The island of Mindoro, which is one of the largest in Bisaya, is the residence of the mayor alcalde of the province of this name; it is one of the most fertile, but less cultivated and less known: it is located in the south of the Batangas province, from which it is separated only by the Strait of Mindoro, which is about 12 miles wide. From North to south, that is to say from the tip of Calavite to that of Padam, Mindoro is about 96 miles long, while its largest width, from east to west or from the Santa Cruz River to the tip of Dumali or Pimalayan, is about 43 miles: its distance from Manila is 21 leagues.

This province contains only seven pueblos, namely:

Calapan.	558 tributos,	2,790 hab.
Naujan..	500	2,500
Irirun.	419	2,095
Boac..	1,649	8,245
Santa Cruz..	1,114	5,570
Gasan.	262	1,310
Luban.	1,110	5,550
		28,060

The table above shows that the province of Mindoro is much less populated than others because its extent; but its inhabitants are sturdy and of a good build. They are naturally bellicose and ferocious, and, before the conquest of the archipelago by the Spaniards, they were the terror of the surrounding islands; because they did not live than piracy and set fire to all the places where they landed. Later on, a large part of them, having taken refuge in the mountains, continued to spread terror on the coasts of Luuçon, Panay and other islands around.

Calapan, capital of the province, is a poor little town and poorly built, located at the edge of the sea, in front of the Punta de Lobo, in the province of Batangas; it does not

offer absolutely nothing remarkable that a very small fortification with two forts. Having no port, it's up to Puerto-Galera, or leagues further north, that we land: but the roads leading to it are very difficult; as well does the city communicate with its port only through average of rowboats. The houses of Calapan are almost all covered with the bark of the palm tree called cabonegro, which lasts, it is said, without altering itself, more than half a century. This custom gives a particular physiognomy to this pueblo.

About 6 leagues south of Calapan is Naujan, village located in a plain at the foot of a mountain and on the edge of a river that bears his name; its inhabitants are busy of agriculture, but they just do as much that their needs require.

Puerto-Galera, of which we have spoken above, is a very small village, which is remarkable only for its port, station falûas of the government; he is feverish and his patients go, in the good season, to recover in Batangas.

The province of Mindoro, though very mountainous, is extraordinary fertility; she is all covered with trees in very thick beds. The peak of Galavite, at north, and that of Dumali are of great elevation. The Duke de Choiseul had formed the project of colonizing this island on behalf of the French Government; but, having asked the approval of that of Spain, he was refused.

The temperature is very high in Mindoro, and the rains abundant, which prevail almost constantly to make the climate unhealthy. This island is watered by a huge amount of rivers, some of which roll gold. That of Naujan is very considerable; she takes her source in a lake located 5 or 6 leagues from the village of this name, inland. The river and the lake feed excellent fish. Mindoro also has sources of mineral waters which are thought to be very effective in different diseases.

This province produces a lot of cocoa and wild cannelliers; Here you can find animals from the rest of the archipelago and, among other things, a species of flying lizard whose bite is, they say, deadly. It is believed to contain gold and copper mines, and the latter, which are immense, stretch even under the sea, from the tip of Calavite to Luban Island.

Not very industrious, for lack of arms, she does not do a considerable trade; she is hardly in relation with the province of Batangas, including a few go to Mindoro to help cultivate the land. It would be yet easy to increase the amount of rice, cocoa, of wax, of logwood that it produces, while on the contrary, rice is sometimes so dear, that the inhabitants are obliged to feed on various kinds of starch. This is that of the palm tree which the indios call yruc; his starch is called yuro: they make bread, they eat with honey. The buri is also very abundant and gives a lot of starch, which they eat as bread with game.

Long before the arrival of the Spaniards, Mindoro was in relation to China, and we have seen above that the general Legaspi was one day forced to pose as a mediator between its inhabitants and the Chinese, the first of whom wanted plunder a shampan stranded on their side.

PROVINCE OF SAMAR.

This province is larger than that of Mindoro and consists of a large island and a few small islets located southeast of the province of Albay. The first, not being separate of Leyte Island only by the extremely narrow strait San Juanico, it is very likely that both once did one.

The island of Samar was formerly called Ibabao. By its topographical position, it is one of the most interesting de la Bisaye; because it is located in the Strait of San Bernardino, and its coasts are bathed, on one side, by the Pacific Ocean and on the other, by the sea of Bisayas. It's in port of Palapa that ships that are preparing to pass the Strait of San Bernardino sometimes relax. It's here that during the siege of Manila by the British, the buildings armed with the Dalabat squadron landed, at the real Calamatan, the cash they brought from America and that they saved thus from the hands of the enemy who on the other hand. A battery is built on each from both shores of Palapa Strait. The plan is from this port in our atlas.

Although this province is very wooded, the air is healthy and there are no endemic diseases; she has the misfortune to be highly exposed to the incursions of the Moros. The pueblos that it contains are twenty-eight, namely:

Catbalogan.	1,265 ½ tributos,	6,328 hab.
Buat.	408	2,040
Hiabong.	318	1,590
Paranas	906 ½	4,532
Calbiga.	469 ½	2,348
Pinabacdao.	177	885
Umauas..	855	4,275
Santa Rita.	270	1,350
Basey..	1,501	7,505
Balañgiga..	189 ½	947
Quinapundan..	204 ½	1,025
Guivan..	2,412 ½	12,062
Lanang.	386 ½	1,955
Borongan..	1,087	5,455
Libas.	479 ½	2,397
Sulat.	681	3,405
Tubig.	512 ½	2,563
Pani.	596	2,980
Catubig..	1,070	5,350
Palapag.	647	3,235
Laoag.	562 ½	2,812
Pumbuian.	224	1,120

Catarman.	1,068 ½	5,343
Bobon.	320	1,600
Capul.	302	1,510
Calbayog.	969 ½	4,847
Bañgajon.	1,258 ½	6,193
Dapdap.	172 ½	862
		96,470 hab.

Catbalogan, capital of the province and residence of the alcalde mayor, is located on the west coast of the island, in a small loop where the probe gives about 5 fathoms of water and at the edge of a small river, not far from the island of Buat; he is fairly regularly built; homes are usually in nipa and wood, with a small stone number, as well as the church and the real casa.

This province is mainly inhabited by Métis, in whose hands is gathered all the commerce, and who mostly trade with the mountain dwellers who sell them wax. She would be very rich if she did not miss of arms for culture, because the vegetation is there extraordinary activity; it provides a large amount of coconut oil at the Manila market. Its forests produce wood of all kinds, which under the administration of the governor Alonzo Faxardo was used to build ships on the Ibatan coast.

The mountains of Samar are very harsh and very high: they are seen from the island of Cebu and especially from the Carac mountains; they served to direct the navigation of explorers who, Leaving Cebu, they discovered the island of Samar. They are inhabited by a large number of indios who take refuge there for not paying the tribute, as well as by tribes wild; but there is no Negritos there. They contain a quantity of animals of all kinds; many streams, and even quite considerable rivers, water and fertilize this beautiful country.

As in several other provinces of the Philippines, iron mines and glitter are found in this one gold rolled by rivers do not allow to doubt that there is also this precious metal. The Brother José de Matha, who was pastor of Palapag, says that there are one at the cape of Spiritu Santo, and an ancient alkalde of Samar assured us that there were also copper mines in the mountain from which flows the river that flows into the lake of Mahou.

Independently of the coconut trees that one cultivates to shoot oil from the nuts, we also harvest in the island a lot of rice that we export to neighboring provinces. Cocoa, transported in Cebu by the *mestizos*, pass after that to be the product from this last island. Abaca also abounds in Samar, from where still draw wax, mother-of-pearl, pearls, scales turtle; we were assured that the indigo that we get there is as good as that of Guatemala; finally various trees give resins, and one catches the balate or tripan in the Strait of San Bernardino.

Coconut oil is made in Samar, as in all the Bisaye, by means of maceration. This process consists of crush the nuts and then leave them to themselves, exposed to the sun, in old pirogues, where they rot, which makes the oil come out, to the amount of

which one add after that by pressing the marc; it is claimed that marc we mix tripe and debris of fish, and that it is there which gives to the thus manufactured oil the foul smell which the distinguished; she is brought to Manila in jugs or tinajas that one embarks on caracoas that give their name to this oil. The bad smell of caracoas oil and the smoke it gives makes it sells much less expensive than the oil beyond Laguna.

The inhabitants of this province do not limit their industry there; they still make sinamay, piña, mats called balançât, from the name of the plant which they use to weave them.

The Saint-Ignace nut, called Cavalanga *pepita*, which is very abundant, was formerly exported to America, where she gave great profits.

The trade that the inhabitants of the province of Samar do is not limited to the Philippines alone; they traffic also with the Palau Archipelago (Pelew), where they carry the products of their own industry, as well as the fabrics they shoot from Manila, choosing the brightest colors; finally knives and scrap of all kinds.

PROVINCE OF LEYTE.

The province of Leyte consists of the island of that name, plus that of Biliran, located on the northern sacrt, that from Panana and the small Camotes Islands.

The island of Leyte is almost as big as that of Samar from which it is separated only by a small strait, and the symmetry which reigns between the two coasts that border this strait indicates, as we have already said above, that it is almost certain that these two islands were once united. It ends to the south by the point of Nija; this part is bathed by the Strait of Surigao, and not far from there find the island of Limasagua. It is near the island of Leyte that the illustrious Magellan came to wet, that's where he made water and food.

This province is poorly inhabited in proportion to its extended; but it is however much more than a few others of Bisaye; it contains 55 pueblos, namely:

Tacloban.	461	tributos,	2,305 hab.
Palo.	1,219		6,095
Tanauan.	1,706		8,530
Dagami..	1,750		8,750
Dulag..	889		4,445
Barauen.	827		4,135
Abuyog..	544		2,720
Hinanangan.	355		1,775
Hinandayan.	76		580
Barago.	513		2,565
Alangabang..	325		1,625
Taro.	374		1,870
San Miguel.	74		370
Babatgon.	203		1,015
Malibago.	45		225
Carigara.	1,302		6,510
Capoocan.	106		530
Leyte.	136		680
Biliran.	183		915
Maripipi.	79		395
Caibiran.	76		380
Palompong.	423		2,115
Quiot..	114		570
Ormoc.	995		4,975
Baybay.	651		5,255
Hilongos.	826		4,130
Indang.	474		2,370
Bato.	168		840
Matalom.	597		1,985
Cajaguaan.	71		355
Maasim..	1,661		8,305
Liloan.	189		945
Cabalian.	245		1,215
			87,275 hab.

Tacloban, capital of the province and residence of the alcalde mayor, is located at the southeast end of the Strait of San Juanico. Its population is poor and miserable, as that of the rest of the province, which is poorly inhabited.

If she was better cultivated, she could give all products of his neighbor; she has some remarkable rivers; in its mountains, which are well wooded, we meet craters of volcanoes; they are inhabited by Móntescos, but we do not see Negritos. Forests feed the same animals as the rest of the archipelago, except, however, wild buffaloes; we

assure him there is none. Mountains contain countless amounts of shiny terrestrial shells richer colors. There are sulfur quarries very abundant, iron mines, magnet, and asbestos in quantity.

Like the Samar, the province of Leyte manufactures considerably of coconut oil, but it often happens, that all coconut trees are destroyed by hurricanes. We also cultivates tobacco and abaca; fishing provides balate and tortoiseshell; found in the rocks and in the caves a few nests of salanganes; forests provide wax and honey. The inhabitants' industry produces tissues similar to those of Samar; finally this province has all the elements of trade and wealth, and everywhere it is rare for alcaldes to make their fortune there. This remark obliges us to point out to our readers that these provincial governors are allowed to do the trading on their behalf, permission that not only their place of salary, but for which they pay the government a certain annual fee. Those whose provinces are too poor to can hope to grow rich through trade are compensated by the treatment they receive from the government.

It's in the village of Carigara, which depends on this province, a religious is said to have planted the first cocoa tree which has been imported to the Philippines.

PANAY ISLAND.

This island, which is large and advantageously located, it is about the shape of a triangle; it is, after that of Luzon, the most populous of the Philippines. It forms three provinces, those of Capiz, Iloilo, and Antique. His position is in the center of Bisaye, between the islands of Mindoro, Tablas and Masbate to the north, Negros and Masbate to the south and at the South-East; straits separate it from the islands of Cuyo to the west and from Leyte to the east; it is defended by a large number small forts and a brave and robust population, against the Moros who rarely dared to attack him. His soil is very fertile and saturated with moisture; its inhabitants are intelligent, patients, very advanced, laborious and full of taste for trade. Many of them engage in fishing, because fish of all species abounds on the coast of this island, as of all those of La Bisaya.

The island of Panay being the first to submit to Spanish, she has always been regarded as the most faithful and most devoted to the government. Its forests produce gigantic trees of all kinds, and particularly ebony, mole and campeche; in the plain we harvest cotton, corn, cocoa, chili, coffee, tobacco of different qualities, sugar, rice in very large abundance. When Legaspi began to run out at Cebu it was from Panay that rice was sent to him. This island still produces vegetables and fruits; its mountains are filled with buffaloes, oxen, deer, wild boars, as well as the rarest and most varied birds. She is watered by many rivers, crocodile dwellings and caimans. There are excellent turtles on its shores.

Manufactures are more active there than anywhere else. The province of Iloilo in particular is also renowned for the tissues known as sinamays and pinas, that the province of Ilocos is for those of cotton: these fabrics, which one does not manufacture that in the Philippines, where they were invented, are of a beauty extraordinary; the combination of their drawings and their colors so varied and so. brilliant admires everything the world. The workers perfectly imitate all models that we present them.

This industry is mostly exploited by women, and their patience is above all what we can imagine.

As for the men, they take care, for their part, of the culture land, fishing, trade, and manufacturing sugar, oil and wood.

PROVINCE OF CAPIZ.

This province, located along the northern coast of the island of Panay, which it occupies entirely, is limited, in inland, by a curved line starting from the small port of Bataan, passing through Archangel Peak, near village of Allac, which is part of the province of Iloïlo, until that of Pandal, on the west coast. Several islets are placed under its jurisdiction; it is less inhabited than Illoo, but more than the province of Antique, which it is getting closer by extension. It contains 24pueblos, whose names follow:

Capiz.	2,229 tributos,	11,145 hab.
Ivisan.	578	2,890
Loctugan.	700	3,500
Panay.	2,376	11,880
Panitan.	1,526	7,630
Dao.	1,200	6,000
Dumalag.	1,228 ½	6,143
Tapas.	558 ½	2,792
Dumarao.	1,720	8,600
Sigma.	962 ½	4,813
Mambusao.	2,474	12,370
Sapian.	796	3,980
Batan.	1,625	8,125
Banga.	1,238	6,190
Madalog.	460	2,300
Malinao.	1,016	5,080
Libacao.	377	1,885
Calibog.	1,816	9,080
Macato.	1,097	5,485
Ibajay.	940 ½	4,702
Buruanga.	263 ½	1,318
Romblon.	612 ½	3,062
Sibuyan.	380	1,900
Banton.	967	4,835
		135,705 hab.

Capiz, residence of the alcalde mayor, is located at a half a league from the sea, in flat terrain, surrounded by rivers, between Panay, Panitan and Lvisan. Some of its houses are of stone, others of wood and nipa; she is defended by a small fort with a weak garrison.

This province presents mountain alternatives and plains; these, which form the inhabited part, are so low, that in rainy weather, the capital itself is by flooded, and the water penetrated into the church. Its inhabitants are industrious, obedient; they like the commerce and the peach; many of them are carpenters and do not require no high wages. The roads are well drilled, and despite the high humidity that prevails during part of the year, the air is salubrious.

The fertility of Gapiz is admirable. It produces an abundance almost unbelievable rice; the mountains are very tall and covered with grass. The only savages that we have find are a few tribes of Negritos.

The main rivers are that of Panay, which is filled with crocodiles, and that of Dumarao. The Capiz river, which is as big as the Pasig, present at its mouth a bench called Stick Bagui, which prevents that Bricks enter at low tide; the rivers of Calibat and Batan fall in Capiz, which they feed. Edges of all these rivers are shaded by a crowd of trees, bird houses of all species and monkeys, some white, others of different colors.

The Capiz coast is quite bad at certain times of the year; however, it has two very safe ports and can receive medium-sized ships, this is that of Batan and that formed by the mouth of the Capiz.

There are gold mines in Dumarao, and a few people claim that there is also a quicksilver. He is makes two harvests of rice a year, and this commodity is so good account, that it is only 2 réaux the pea of 48 gloves, while in other provinces the same measure is 20 reals.

After what we said earlier from Panay Island in general, it is useless for us to go into great detail on trade and industry in this province in particular.

The islets of Tablas, Sibuyan, Romblon, Simara, from Bataniello, from Baton and those who are called backs Hermanas (the Two Sisters) depend on this province.

The largest of these islets is that of Tablas; it contains three small villages and a fort with some soldiers for garrison; lebalate fishing, although the often worried by pirates. Sibuyan is still almost wild; there is however a small village administered by an Indian gobernadorcillo and whose church is served by the priest of Romblon. This last island contains a small village perfectly well kept, and, on the north-east side, a port that can accommodate all kinds of boats. We see there a small fort built by a religious recollet, so to be able to resist the excursions that the Moros made in the island; also this good religious, at the head of the inhabitants of his village, he repulsed them so often, that he received the nickname of Captain Terror, and his memory is still today in veneration on the island.

The Pueblo de Banton is located in the island of that name. That Maestro de Campo contains, it is said, quarries plaster and red ocher.

PROVINCE OF ILOILO.

This province, located in the southeastern part of Panay is, like the island itself, triangular in shape; it is bounded on the north by the province of Capiz, on the west by that of Antique and to the south-east by the arm of the sea which separates it from Negros Island. It is the largest of the three provinces that encloses the island of Panay. It is also the most populated, the richest, the most industrious and the most commercial three; many small islands depend on it. We count the following 30 pueblos:

Iloïlo.	774	tributos,	3,870 hab.
Molo.	1,406		7,030
Arevalo..	830		4,150
Oton.	2,457		12,285
Tigbavan.	2,540		12,700
Guimbal.	1,850		9,250
Miagao.	2,672 ½		13,363
San Joaquin.	890		4,450
Igbaras.	2,417 ½		12,087
Tubungan.	940		4,700
Camando.	2,015		10,075
Alimodian.	2,017		10,085
San Miguel.	1,225 ½		6,128
Mandurriao.	942		4,710
Jaro.	4,317 ½		21,587
Santa Barbara..	2,470		12,350
Cabatuan.	3,233		16,165
Maasim..	1,349 ½		6,748
Janivay.	2,202		11,010
Lambunao.	1,340		6,700
Calinog..	1,060		5,800
Passi.	1,652 ½		8,267
Laglag.	814		4,070

Dingle.	789	3,945
Pototan..	2,950	14,750
Barotac nuevo..	2,125	10,625
Barotac viejo.	853	4,265
Ajni.	503	2,515
Dumangas.	2,425	12,125
Guimaras.	795	3,975
		259,780

The provincial capital, which is named after her, Iloilo, is located near the sea, on the edge of the narrow channel which separates the province from the island of Guimaras; he is watered by a wide and deep river where ships come in to to be put in hull.

Although the pueblo of Iloïlo is the capital of a province important and rich, he is poor and poorly inhabited; his church itself is not built of stone, but in one mixture of brick, wood and lime, known in the Philippines under the name of pampango tabic (partition of the Pampanga); she is remarkable only by her cross, famous as the miraculous cross of Iloilo. However, Pueblo de Jaro, which is only half a league from the capital and that makes it so to speak part, is much more considerable and incomparably more populous than it is it itself.

Although generally mountainous, this province contains also very beautiful plains; the countryside offers a blow very pleasant and very picturesque, and the air is of a remarkable health: there are few provinces that enjoy as fresh, especially in windy times from the North: It is well-drilled, and many of its roads are passable for cars. Rich by the productions of its soil, it is no less so by its industry, of which we will detail the products below.

The main rivers that water the province of Iloilo are the Iloilo, Janivay, Iglo, Tubungan and Cabatuan; the latter is inhabited by crocodiles. The mountains that divide the island according to the boundaries of the provinces are very high and well wooded; they feed the same animals as the rest of the archipelago; there are gold mines. Iloïlo is cultivated with rice, cotton, maize, cocoa, the coconut, whose pueblo Guimbal abounds more particularly; tobacco, which is of good quality; the abaca: we make salt, we sin the turtle and the tripan or balate.

That we are now allowed to expand on the remarkable industry of this rich and interesting province. While men are engaged in fishing and trade, women are busy spinning and weaving the beautiful fabrics called nipis and sinamays. The pueblo of Miagao manufactures of all kinds. Jaro makes mostly abaca paintings; Janivay spinning and weaving cotton, and making striped fabrics (rayadillos), destortingas, handkerchiefs, blankets, beds, carpets, towels and fine tablecloths. We harvest also a lot of cotton in Tigbavan.

It's pineapple leaves, this same plant that produces the excellent fruit of this name, that one removes the threads loose and white with which the precious goods are made fabrics called nipis or piñas. We start by planting pineapple cuttings; they sometimes go out to the number from twelve to the bottom of the fruit, where they are broken for transplanting in a light soil a little sheltered by trees if possible, and water them immediately after have planted. At four months, they are taken out, so that they do not give no fruit, and for the leaves to become wider and longer; they reach, indeed, to the age eight months, the length of an elbow, over a width of six fingers: we tear them off and put them on a board that a man fixes with his foot; then, with a piece of broken plate, it rasp the leaf and remove all the parenchyma until the thread appears. We then remove these wires in the middle and we tear them off carefully from a end to end; they are washed in two or three waters, they are air dry and clean. This first operation they are separated by length and quality; after what, the women, who are more particularly in charge of this work, tie the ends end to end. We then go up the job, which is very simple and usually of bamboo, and we load the shuttle to weave. So that the work is successful, the temperature must not be too much high or low, and the air neither too dry nor too wet. The slightest excess, in one or the other direction, causes the wires to break each shuttle stroke; and, when it is a fabric of a very large finesse that we want to get, we work under a net. So many precautions should not surprise, because there is nothing in Europe comparable to these stuffs for the beauty. The finished piece is washed in clear water and we send it to the Manila market. You must have seen the indios work to get an idea of their patience; he is coming often, in a whole day, a man does not than half an inch of cloth and that its strand breaks at each moment. The finest quality is called pinilian; she does not only order.

Many inhabitants of Iloilo grow pineapple, in the only to obtain the filaments they sell to the weavers.

The piña is always narrow, and there is only one of which used to make dresses, which is given 1 1/4 to 11/2 vare of width (lm to lm, 25). The piña, mixed with silk and representing drawings, is worth 2 to 2 1/2 piastres the vare, so that a dress for a woman comes back again pretty expensive ; but this stuff is very strong and washes very well. When the pina is united, which is not common, it is embroidered by embroiderers of Hermita and Malate, near Manila, which excels in this kind of work. The embroidery that comes out of their hands offer the proof almost unbelievable patience; they are of a beauty admirable, that it would not be possible to imitate in Europe, because the way would be exorbitant. Most remarkable and the most graceful are the ones that the Spaniards call los deshilados and los calados; those are embroidery up to date.

The island of Guimaras, the largest of those who depend of the province of Iloilo, is located on the coast of the island of Panay, from which it is distant in some places only from one league; it forms at the south a kind of gulf, but which is actually a strait, having 10 leagues long and sometimes up to 5 leagues wide.

The islets called Coulabra, Pan de Azucar, Apilon and some others located near the northernmost coast of Iloilo are only feebly inhabited, although furrowed by rivers and streams that make the countryside enchanting and provide him with extremely lush.

They form several straits, whose appearance is the most graceful and the most beautiful, and that the natural of the country know as silanga. This is where we sometimes meets pirates and that the indios of the province will take care of the Balateo, that is to say the fishing balate. There are also turtles that provide a shell very beautiful. Islets known as los Siete Pecados are at the entrance of the strait that leads to the port of Iloilo and make navigation difficult.

PROVINCE OF ANTIQUE.

This province is located in the western part of the island of Panay, which she occupies all the coast, from the tip of Naso in the south to Pandan in the north, 10 miles south from the tip of Potol. Its shape is triangular; it is bounded on the north by the province of Capiz, on the south by of Iloilo, and to the east by the sea. Its inhabitants are less laborious and less industrious than those of other provinces of Panay Island, which must be attributed in part to their geographical situation, which does not allow them to have frequent relations with the rest of the Philippines. On the one On the other hand, the coast of Antique is dangerous, especially at the time of the southwestern monsoon; then the small boats that cabotage trade are afraid to encounter the Moros in such isolated areas, while large vessels coming from the east after crossing the Strait of Basilan, stop there only to make food or water and still very rarely; we have seen buildings English and we were assured that they were getting wet often enough. The currents are very strong on this coast.

The province of Antique contains the following pueblos:

San José et Antique.. . .	1,659 tributos,	8,295 hab.
San Pedro.	921	4,605
Sibalong.	1,667 ½	8,538
Dao..	787 ½	3,937
Cagayan.	270	1,350
Patnongon.	699	3,495
Caritan.	235	1,175
Bugasan.	2,000	10,000
Nalupa.	1,315	6,575
Colasi..	1,045	5,225
Pandan.	900	4,500
		57,495 hab.

The two pueblos of Antique and San José together form the capital of the province. This small town, miserable and sparsely populated, was founded in 1755 on the edge of the river that bears his name; she is defended by a few fortifications and a small number of pieces of cannon. There is a good anchorage a short distance from the coast, which of the remains, as we have said above, unsafe; he must approach it carefully and stand overnight.

Antique is composed alternately of mountains and plains; it presents charming countryside, especially in the season when the rice is green. Its temperature is very pleasant, being refreshed by the sea breeze; the air is usually there safe.

The roads in this province are in very bad condition and communications with Iloilo extremely difficult; the roads that lead from one of these provinces to another are so narrow, that when you get to the top of the mountains separating them, a cry is heard to warn that the path is busy. We can distinguish among these mountains the peak Guimba and Guinabotan, which are very high and covered with thick forests; they are inhabited by Negritos and there are the same wild animals as in the rest of the archipelago.

Several rivers water the province of Antique; they are naturally of little importance, but they become very large at the time of the rains. The land is everywhere extraordinary fertility. Rice is its main production; we grow a lot but, for the reasons we have indicated, the harvests find so few outlets, that sells to 2 reals the peacoat, and even gave up five cabans for one dollar: there is also corn, good tobacco, cotton, sugar, cocoa, coffee, fresh vegetables and abaca. Wood of all kinds abound; we can stock oxen and pigs.

We have seen above that the inhabitants of Antique were distinguished not by their industry; they are not not totally private. They tan leather and make some abaca and cotton fabrics for their particular use; they even export a little. They also engage in turtle, balate and pearls.

CHAPTER XV.
FOLLOWING THE GEOGRAPHY OF THE PROVINCES.

Cebu.- The island of los Negros.- The island of Mindanao. - Caraga. - Misamis. - Samboanga.-The Calamian Islands. - The Mariana Islands.

PROVINCE OF CÉBU.

The province of Cebu is formed by the island of that name, which its inhabitants called Zogbu when Magellan landed there, in 1521: they were the first to be baptized in this archipelago and also the first ones who recognized themselves as subjects of King of Spain: This island is located between the island of los Negros, to the west, from which it is separated only by the Strait of Tanon, and the Mactan and Bohol islands, which depend on it, to ballast. This province, one of the richest dice in La Bisaye, contains forty-one pueblos, whose names follow:

Cébu.	1,661 tributos,	8,805 hab.
San Nicolas.	1,036	13,180
Talisay.	1,591	6,955
Naga.	1,088 ½	5,443
Mandani.	2,068 ½	10,542

Poro	296	1,480
Opon	1,276	6,380
Talamban	563 ½	2,818
Danao	1,213 ½	6,057
Catmon	838	4,190
Sogot	703	3,515
Daan-Bantayan	517	2,585
Bantayan	1,359	6,795
Barili	982	4,910
Badian	1,240	6,200
Malaboyoc	996	4,980
Sanibuan	1,262	6,310
Siquijor	1,489	7,445
Canoan	849	4,245
Roljon	1,534 ½	7,673
Dalaguete	1,458	7,290
Argao	1,625 ½	8,127
Sibonga	923	4,615
Carcar	1,211 ½	6,058
Inabañgaa	650	3,250
Talibong	615	3,075
Guindulman	891	4,455
Jatna	2,111 ½	10,557
Dimiao	1,980	9,900
Loay	1,029	5,145
Loboc	2,051 ½	10,258
San Isidro de Bitar	451	2,255
Balilijan	575	2,878
Bacloyon	2,121 ½	10,607
Dauis	1,269 ½	6,318
Panglao	853	4,265
Tagbilaran	2,523	12,615
Paminuitan	541 ½	2,707
Malabojoc	1,551 ½	7,758
Loon	1,563	7,815
Calape	904	4,520
		256,803 hab.

Cebu, capital of this province, is the seat of the evoque of the spiritual province of that name and that of the alcalde mayor; it is located near the sea, in front of the island of Mactana. The aspect it presents is very agreeable; a estero or small river divides it into two parts, one of which, called Pacian, is inhabited only by *mestizos* who live entirely separated from the rest of the city, with which they never wanted to get together, for the reason that, not paying not 500 tributes, they are entitled to what is called a *cure royal*, that is, paid by the government, and they never wanted to give up this advantage. These *mestizos* are rich, industrial and large traders; they maintain correspondents in Manila, and they are the ones who make the fortune of Cebu.

The city of Cebu proper, which is defended by a small fort and some soldiers, looks like all cities Philippines; its churches and houses, built in stone and very large, recall a little the appearance from Manila. The cathedral is very beautiful: that's where we go adore the Santo Niño (the holy baby Jesus), purpose of the pilgrimage that we come to make points furthest from the archipelago, and in whose intercession one has the greatest trust: it is still there that we venerate the planted cross by Magellan. The Episcopal Palace is a beautiful building. We finds in the city a hospital for lepers.

The islands of Bantayan, Siquijor, Davis, Bohol and Camotes are under the jurisdiction of Cebu.

The land of this province is sandy and even a not very stony; culture is not so widespread than in other islands, which is partly due to lack of water; because it rarely rains and the rain there grave is promptly absorbed as a result of the nature of the ground. There are however some valleys of an admirable fertility; they provide fat pastures for the cattle: the sheep and the kid have an exquisite taste.

The temperature of the island of Cebu is most agreeable; the breeze that rises in the morning and the evening spreads a gentle freshness that one does not experience in Manila.

This province derives its main wealth from its trade outside; it has few rivers; most are not not navigable or covered with rushes, many retreats for crocodiles. On the other hand, she has some good roads that can be traveled by car and from where one can get to return to the main pueblos along the coast. Countless bees, which give a delicious honey, flit in the mountains, where they are attracted by the sweet fragrance of a crowd of medicinal plants. Among the trees which cover these mountains, we notice the cotton of the great species, and, in the number of resident birds forests, we distinguish a pigeon that is not found elsewhere than on the island of Cebu; it is the size of a guinea fowl; a collar surrounds his neck; its plumage presents seven different colors, and its head is adorned an elegant egret.

It is asserted that in the mountains of Cebu, one never met neither Negritos nor wild of any race, but, on the other hand, animals of all species that are found in the Philippines, and, among others, the muskrat. The inhabitants of the island remove sands, by the means of an operation they call the *dulan*, the gold of a high value.

The main productions of the country are a little rice, a lot of maize, though the harvest is sometimes lacking lack of water; sugar, cotton; the best cocoa of the Philippines, though a large part of the one that sells under the name of Cébu's cocoa comes from the island of Negros; tobacco, various starches, vegetables and fruits; mijo, a species of millet that once formed the main food of the inhabitants; finally abacà.

The industry is not much more in honor in this province than is agriculture. We manufacture there some tissues of nipis and sinamay but less than cotton, the manufacture of which the inhabitants of several pueblos of the coast, where the art of dyeing is even pushed far away. The fish is very abundant and we find many pearls on the bench of Bantallan Island, located north of Tanon. But, speaking of industry, we do not must not forget that the island of Cebu is renowned for its beautiful gargoulettes, a kind of alcarazas that communicate a great freshness in the water that is put there; they are made of a red soil of a remarkable variety and which receives a very beautiful polite. Its puff pastries called ojaldres; are of a delicacy that would do honor to the best pastry chefs from Paris; his *broas* or biscuits are a spoon very light and excellent for convalescents; finally, its cheeses are highly esteemed.

The trade and wealth of this province are between the hands of the *mestizos*, who send their agents to buy the products from neighboring provinces: this is how, from Leyte and from Panay, they receive tobacco, dubalate, mother-of-pearl; of Samar, coconut oil, tobacco, etc .; of Caraga, of gold; Misamis, still gold, coffee, wax, cocoa; Calamianes, balate, wax, nests of salanganes, and the excellent cocoa from Negros Island.

The island of Bohol, which depends on Cebu, comprises fourteen pueblos; the air is very healthy there: a part of the island is suitable for rice cultivation; the other part only serves to fatten herds. It is watered by several rivers, one of which comes out of a lake located in the interior of the island. The inhabitants of Bohol are thought to be very brave and they have it, in effect, proved in different circumstances; they are also very laborious; they make coconut oil and, with cotton they harvest, they make fabrics of great strength: they also weave some silk stuffs that we we saw some nice samples. The northern coast of this island provides an abundance of balate of superior quality.

The inhabitants of the island of Siquijor or Fuegos are hardworking and rich; they grow a lot of rice, corn and cocoa; they feed a large quantity of cows; they collect wax; they go fishing for balate and of the turtle. The entrance to the port of Siquijor is difficult; but it is deep and can receive the largest ships.

Davis and Panglao are two small islands that have remarkable to be surrounded by a sandbar that extends far into the sea.

Mactan is located northwest of Bohol and southeast of the city of Cebu, from which it is separated only by a strait three quarters of a league wide. It's between these two islands that ships find shelter from the winds; but they must be very careful in this navigation. The bottom of the channel consists partly of limestone, whose inhabitants use to make lime. The island of Mactan acquired a sad celebrity by the death of Magellan.

We must not leave the province of Cebu without recalling that the pueblo of Bolohon has a small fort, in which his parish priest, assisted by his parishioners, defended himself day heroically against an attack of the Moros.

PROVINCE OF NEGROS.

The province of Negros is formed by the island of los Negros, which was formerly called Buglas, but which was given this new name because we found a large number small negroes: it is located between Iloilo, in the northwest, and Cebu, to the south-east, being separated from it only by the Strait of Tanon, produced, in the long run, by force north-east wind and current direction; because these two islands were, no doubt, once united. This one is larger, but less rich and less populated than Cebu, and encloses the following twenty-eight pueblos, namely:

Jimamailan.	337 tributos,	1,685 hab.
Talabang..	131	655
Suay..	138	690
Jinigaran.	289	1,445
Bago..	399	1,995
Sumac.	291	1,455
Bacolot.	1,486	7,430
Minoluan.	607	3,035
Buenretiro.	88	440
Silay..	361	1,805
Ilog.	388	1,940
Cabancalan..	247	1,235
Dancalan..	125	625
Guilamgan..	50	250
Cauayan.	138	690
Isin.	84	420
Tanjay..	613	3,065
Amblan.	251	1,255
Bais.	261	1,305
Ayungon..	90	450
Tayasan.	74	370
Guimalalot..	89	445
Jinoboan..	26	130
Sibulan.	579	2,895
Dumaguete.	1,802	9,010
Duin..	519	2,595
Siaton.	486	2,430
Mision.	20	100
		49,845 hab.

The capital of this province is Jimarnailan, a small town located in the western part of the island and on a little cove deep, vis-à-vis some small islets that lie roughly opposite the island of Guimaras and almost at confluence of the rivers of Talaban and Vignit. Poor, built while nipa, she does not even have a royal house in stone, and his church too is covered in nipa, like all the rest of the buildings in the city; his river, which is pretty deep, could receive bricks, if the bar that in shut the entrance did not prevent them from entering. To overcome this obstacle is employed by a very ingenious process, which consists of attaching the keel of buildings up to the line float a large amount of bamboos that lift them.

All pueblos of this island are built on the edge of the except for Tanay and Uoc, which are in the interior. The center is little or not known; he is still inhabited today by niggers and savages who go down to the villages to traffic with their inhabitants, and attack them only when someone has been killed theirs. The province of Negros is beautiful and fertile and could to become very rich if it were well cultivated. The communications there are almost none; also, when we want cross the countryside to get from one side of the island to the other, as if to go from the capital to Dumaguete, so to embark and go to Cebu, we are forced to cross high mountains and vast forests where there is almost no cleared trails, and rest under hangars surrounded by Negritos and Igorrotes, exposed, if these populations were more nasty, to receive a shot of a poisoned arrow. Besides, it's always good to be wary of them when they come to visit you in your house and the dismiss promptly after giving them a few food. It is especially at the passage of the mountain called *tipasi* or grain of rice, because it has the shape, it takes call all his courage to his aid; because, this passage being very hard, one is obliged to be carried, in a species hammock, by a large number of natural people who take turns often, so that one is quite at their discretion.

The air of this province is healthy, and the only disease there is frequent is the jaundice, following excesses that the inhabitants commit with the wine of the country called tuba. This snorkel is nothing else than the coconut sap, which is made ferment with a little bit of tafigal bark, and in the evening when she has acquired a little sour taste, she is drunk by the natives. Could it be this habit that makes people dizzy and makes them nonchalant? What is certain is that this province produces almost nothing of what we found in others, while all circumstances there are favorable to production. She is watered by a large number of rivers, the largest of which is that of Guinagaran; she is very rich in fish and one can meets a lot of caimans.

The only port that deserves to be named is Bacolot; it is located a little north of the chief town and can receive strong enough buildings: Bonbonon and Dumaguete have good anchorages, but only for small boats. The coast of the island is, in general, good and sandy on the west side; but, to the east, she is very dangerous, because of the currents of the Strait of Tanon,

A mountain range with several high peaks crosses the island, from north to south, in all its length and is inhabited by Negritos and Montescos. Regardless animals common to the rest of the archipelago, there are still several species of monkeys, one of them of which is all white, as well as civets. Forests produce cabinetry of the most beautiful colors, such as the *camagong*, which is red; the *camilay*, who is white, with pink veins, and ebony, which is the most beautiful black: logwood also grows there. The Savages

themselves grow cocoa and coffee. The island produces still tobacco as good as that of Cagayan, wax and honey in great abundance; plaster, crystal rock and sulfur. In the southern part of the province, we find cochineal that we do not take the trouble to pick up.

The civilized inhabitants cultivate rice, which they export to Cebu; the cabonegro, of which they make cables; Cocoa, the abaca and the tobacco: they manufacture some stuffs; they are very addicted to fishing, which is explained by the abundance really prodigious fish in the seas that surround this island. Pearls are fishing in the Strait of Tanon, Bantalan and the Cagayan Islands.

Trade with Manila, which is almost entirely in the hands of the alkalde mayor, consists of paddy or rice raw and tobacco leaf, since the government has promised the provinces of Bisaye to bring him for its factories. It is even said that he has just given orders so that tobacco growing is no longer free in Bisaya and that part of the Philippines is subject to but to the exercise of indirect contributions, as is already Luzonia. Government pays for tobacco leaves at the rate of 2 piastres and a half the fardo.

The rocks of the island of Negros also contain, at this it seems, nests of salanganes.

As we said in describing the island of Cebu, the Métis of this province send their agents to the neighboring island Negros to buy palay, cocoa, pearls, fish, wax, abaca and oil by maceration; also this part of the trade is happening almost all outside the alkalde.

The earthquakes that are felt in Cebu and Iloïlo are also born not strangers to the island of Negros.

The Cagayanes group is located about 25 leagues west of the tip of Sojotan.

ISLAND OF MINDANAO.

The island of Mindanao is also called Magindanao, a word that means inhabitants of the lakes; because it contains several. The natives of the country had again given him the the name of Moluca-Bezar or Grande-Moluque, because its productions are the same as those of this archipelago.

This island with a physiognomy generally different from the rest of the Bisaya, we first tried to form, with the small islands around it, at a particular division which we would have called Mindanaia; but, after careful consideration, we preferred to leave him the place that is commonly assigned to Manila and continue, therefore, to classify it among the Bisayas. Let's give a general idea before entering the details of the provinces of which it is composed.

Mindanao is, after Luzon, the largest of all islands that make up the Philippine archipelago; it is located in the southern end of the Bisaya, a little more towards the south than the islands of Leyte and Negros: it is given 155 leagues from east to west, 75 from north to south, and about 300 leagues in circumference.

Only the smallest part of this island belongs to the Spanish Government; the rest is independent. Healthy in some localities, the air passes to be little in others. The eastern coast is what sailors call healthy; but that of the north and the west is dangerous, cause currents that make the sea bad, though it be deep. The surroundings of Iligan Bay enjoy less pure air, but a calmer sea, because that they are sheltered by high mountains, where are formed terrible storms. Samboanga and the territory that depends on it are the part of the island that foreign buildings visit most frequently, because ships coming on the east side can, in any monsoon, pass through the Strait of Basilan. All the part of the island that has since stretched Massiloc, south, to Cape San Agustín is independent and belongs to the Ulanos and the Sultan of Mindanao.

Mindanao is immensely rich in productions of any species and especially in wood. Although the interior of the country is little known, we know that it presents not only the products common to all the rest of the Philippines but still most of those from the Moluccas. Among a large number of rivers that water it, there are about twenty more remarkable than the others, and the most important of which are Butuan and Mindanao. This island also contains lakes, among others are that of Malanao or Lanao, which is and of considerable depth: all its waters abound in fish that alone would feed the inhabitants, and the frequent floods to which it is subject communicate an admirable fertility to its soil. The The coasts of Mindanao are very much cut up; they form remarkable ports and bays, and even gulfs where ships are perfectly safe. Its mountains, which are very high, cover themselves with the richest vegetation: in the number, there are several craters of extinct volcanoes and others in full ignition; their flanks conceal a large number of different minerals, and their forests feed the most curious animals. Foreign productions in the Philippines that are found on the island of Mindanao are cinnamon, nutmeg, pepper and even cinchona wild.

The savages, who are very numerous in this island and divided in an infinity of different races, bring to the alkalde a considerable amount of powder and gold shot, for it seems that the sand of all the rivers contains some. There are even several pueblos whose inhabitants have other exchange object than this powder and who use it even for their smaller purchases.

The three provinces that belong to the government spanish, starting from the north, those of Caraga, Misamis and Samboanga; the latter only includes the fortress or presidio of Samboanga, with a territory located along the coast, but not enough to deserve the name of province; also the Spaniards do not they usually give it to him.

Among the different wild races that inhabit the island of Mindanao, we notice the Àrafuras, the Subanos, the Caragas, the Lutanos and Illanos, who come from the Malay whose language they have preserved; they live from piracy in the independent part of the island but are very dedicated and very submissive to the Spanish government in the conquered part.

PROVINCE OF CARAGA.

The province of Caraga is, as we have just to say, the most northern of the three that the Spaniards possess in the island of Mindanao, of which she also occupies the entire east coast, from the northern tip of the island to Cape San Agustin and stretches into

Butuan Bay to the river of that name. It is very narrow, but less as some travelers claim, who say that it is absolutely formed only by the ribs. This province is, of all the archipelago, the richest in gold mines; this is especially where the indios use powder and shot as a common currency, either for their daily shopping, either for the bets they make in the cockfights.

Very hilly and overgrown thick, the Caraga is only very feebly inhabited; on the thirty pueblos it contains, most are missing even churches and have only four parish priests, which is strong rare in the Philippines. Here are the names and the population of these villages:

Cabecera de Surigao. .	1,449 tributos,	7,005 hab.
Jaganan.	102	510
Placer.	102	510
Bacnag.	73	365
Gigaguit.	362	1,810
Dinagat.	214	1,070
Nonoc.	56	280
Cacub.	437	2,185
Dupa.	123	615
Cabuntog.	123	615
Sepao.	116	580
Cantilan.	785	3,925
Tanda.	664	3,320
Tago.	483	2,415
Sianga..	283	1,415
San Juan.	41	205
Ginatuan..	442	2,210
Bislic.	54	270
Catecel..	208	1,040
Puinablangan..	42	210
Dacnan.	16	80
Baganga.	46	230
Caraga	87	435
Butuan..	1,304 ½	6,525
Tubay.	41	205
Mainit.	189	945
Jabonga.	191	955
Talacogon...	182	910
Lineo.	151	755
Gingoog.	140	700
		42,583 hab.

Surigao, capital of this province, is situated at its northern extremity at 9 "45 'of northern latitude, on the river of the same name, which has an interior of 3 fathoms of water, and the port of Surigao is it is very difficult because the currents are very fast and the wind is very strong at the time of the north-east monsoon, there are building

sites and good ships are built there. the wood supplied by the surrounding mountains in abundance, and its trade consists chiefly of gold dust, wax, cocoa, rice, and a little pepper and musk.

The province of Caraga could be the richest of the Philippines if it was well exploited; the mere gold it contains would suffice for that. But, as the inhabitants bring scarcely anything to the market except powder and very little shot, it is a proof that one exploits only the sand of the rivers and that one neglects the mines. Mr. Oudon de Virli, our worthy compatriot, is the only one who, until now, has discovered
and operated gold mines in Caraga; we know that he is at present exploiting a vein which seems very productive. We dare to hope that the zeal and labors of a man who is as persevering as he is intelligent will be better paid in the future than they have been hitherto, and that he will be put in a position to carry out a so difficult business.

The people of this province are good and docile, but not very industrious; it is so easy for them to afford of existence using the metal they find everywhere under their steps, that they care little about culture and industry.

It is stated that among the timbers that produce the vast forests of Caraga lies the *tek*, this precious wood, both lighter and more durable than the oak and enjoys the property of being incorruptible in water, while its bitterness protects it from insects:
English make it a big use for the ships they build in India; they took with them a
large amount when they left the island of Java where it abounds.

These same forests also provide luxury woods for the use of cabinetmakers, and others used in medicine, or which produce fruits and seeds useful to man. The bees are so numerous, that we collect from all sides A large amount of wax and honey; this honey, being mixed with roots and starchy foods, forms the main food of wild people. All in all, however, this province is less productive than the rest of Mindanao Island, because it is very exposed to the winds of the Pacific Ocean.

The mountains of Caraga are the home, not only animals that are found throughout the rest of the archipelago, but still some species that are quite special or which are only found in a few other provinces; such are the civet, different species of musk cats, a wide variety of monkeys and especially orangutans; some are all black, crested and red ass. Among the wild breeds who live in these mountains, we notice the Manobos and the Tagbaloyes.

Much of the territory of this province is of volcanic origin, there are, beside the gold mines, others of mercury sulphide and sulfur.

Among the rivers we can see that of Tubay and the big Butuan River flowing into the bay from Butuan; the latter is broad and majestic, it comes out of a lake, by means of which it communicates, it is said, with the Illana Bay. Small ships can enter this river, but they must take some precautions, because of the sandbank that lies near the eastern tip of its bank. The best anchorage in the province is without a doubt Butuan Bay, where Magellan came to make food on his arrival in this archipelago. This big browser was pretty bold to franehir the Strait of Surigao, which he did not had an opportunity to recognize before, and who is still a very difficult passage, even for most browsers experienced of our time.

Several forts were raised in the Caraga, to defend it against incursions of the Moros, which does not prevent not try sometimes, since we have even seen squadrons of Pancos go out by the river and come out in Butuan Bay, notwithstanding the presence of the Fort Linao, built on the right bank of the river. Catel's is located near the cove of this name and half a league from the beach; it is very small, and its ramparts are only in the ground and in wood; he has for all garrison a corporal and some men. Fort San José, which defends on the sea side the Pueblo de Tandal, is more considerable; he is in the form of triangle, with a bastion at each angle; the walls are in stone and garnished with some pieces of cannon.

Islands depend on this province; the most remarkable is that of San Juan, located on the east side and 50 miles from the coast: although she has, at the report of Dampier, 58 miles long and 24 wide, whether it's high enough above sea level, sea and covered with great forest, there have been browsers who have questioned until his existence; which does not fail to be enough strange, in a sea so busy.

PROVINCE OF MISAMIS.

The province of Misamis, located on the north coast from the island of Mindanao and west of Caraga, has since the Butuan River to the Gulf of Sindangan, not far of the territory of Samboanga.

This alcaldie has much more commercial importance that of Caraga, being more favorably located and more within reach of the other provinces of Bisaye; indeed, she is not only a short distance south of the Negros Islands, from Cebu, Bohol and Leyte.

Although poorly inhabited, it is nevertheless more than that of Caraga, considering the much smaller extent of its territory; she also lacks priests, and many of his pueblos are served by the same priest. They are twenty-six, namely:

Misamis.	520	tributos,	2,600 hab.
Lolulan.	115		575
Iligan.	450		2,250
Initao.	119		595
Nahuan..	25		125
Alubijid.	86		430
Malugan.	85		425
Pigtao.	112		560
Cagayan.	896		4,480
Iponan.	225		1,125
Guza.	81		405
Agusan.	120		600
Jasaan.	450		2,250
Tagoloan.	486		2,430
Balingasag.	213		1,065
Salay..	96		480
Quinigaitan.	207		1,055
Catarman..	860		4,300
Mambajao..	219		1,095
Sagay..	237		1,185
Guinsiliban.	148		740
Dapitan.	504		2,520
Ilaya.	146		730
Dipolog..	140		700
Lumbungan.	156		780
Langaran..	87		435
			33,915 hab.

Misamis is the chief town of the province of that name; he is situc on the lligan hedge, east of Panguil Lake. It's the the richest pueblo in the province; a small fort built on the strike defends him against the attacks of the pirates moros who used to visit them frequently. It is enough trader.

Of all the provinces of the Philippines it is that of Misamis whose ribs are the most sinuous and the most irregular part of Butuan Bay is one of them, and there are several more still, such as the bay of Macahalao and that of Iligan; the latter offers shelter assured and a good anchorage, even to larger vessels.

The surface of the earth and the productions of the three kingdoms are the same in this province as in those we have already described.

Three small forts defend the coast; the first of which we have already spoken, is placed at Misamis; that of Iligan has stone ramparts, garrison and artillery; the third, that of Cagayan, is built on the right bank from the river that flows into Macahalao Bay. Among the rivers that water this province, we notice the one throwing itself into Iligan

Bay and coming out, it is said, by a Cataract of Lake Malanao or Lano, the largest and most most remarkable of all the island of Mindanao.

The Misamis trade consists mainly of coffee, cocoa, rice and gold powder, of which the alcalde makes shipments to Manila. It is one of the most sought-after alcaldies, because it provides good profits. The *mestizos* also do some trade on their behalf.

The air of this province is healthy and the fertility of its soil does not leave nothing to be desired; we only regret that it is not not more cultivated.

SAMBOANGA.

As we have said above, Samboanga is not an alcaldie or a province like the two preceding ones. It is a presidio or stronghold where we relegate criminals; it commands the Strait of Basilan and serves to contain the barbarian populations of this archipelago. Samboanga is, after Manila, the most important fortress of Philippines; the place is very well built, and its real name is Nuestra Señora del Pilar of Zaragosa. Its latitude is, according to most observations, from 6° 54' 27 " north, and its longitude of 129 ° 45 '57 "is built on the beach, which is low enough, the city has no port; but its harbor offers a pretty good anchorage at some time of the year. This point is the first of the island that the Spaniards fortified: before that time they had settled quietly in the other islands; but, while they were busy at an expedition against the island of Solou, of which they had even seized, the Zubanos, inhabitants of the mountains of Mindanao, rose up against them and drove them out of the land. This circumstance caused the Spaniards to abandon their new conquest of Solou, and in 1665 Don Juan Chavez was charged with an expedition against Mindanao; he left so from the island of Cebu with three hundred men he landed on the shore of Samboanga, to protect the workers who were working at the erection of the fort, a thousand indios were employed there, and the construction costs were covered by the tax of a ganta of rice, which each inhabitant of the Bisaya and we sold everything that was not consumed by the workers.

The square forms a square, having 63 development vares on each side, with a bastion at each handle: these bastions are called St. Philip, St. Ferdinand, St. François and Saint-Louis. The ground, in the interior, is high of 8 vares and the parapet of 5 feet. The place contains barracks, powder magazines, provisions and ammunition of all kinds; prisons, a weapons room and a foundry for projectiles; casemates: its ramparts are lined with guns of different calibres and mortars and howitzers.

She has, besides, a small fort, having four bastions called St. Ignace, St. Catherine, St. Barbara and Saint-Jean-de-Dieu, which forms like the citadel, containing a small palace for the governor, a church parish church in poor condition, a new chapel, a hospital and a well of water a little briny; there is even a stream that supplies fresh water to the garrison; in one but all that is necessary to support a siege. The work was carried out, it is said, under the direction of Brother Melchior from Jora, a famous geometer. Unfortunately the place is not as well maintained as it could be, and its garrison, which should be 1,000 men, does not rise to very close to that number.

The territory that depends on the fortress of Samboanga not only to have a considerable extent; it is located between Gordu Point, Sindangan Bay, at north, and

the Massinloc River, to the south. At 8 or 10 miles, to the northwest is the small cove of Caldera, which serves as a port for Samboanga. At the bottom of this cove, there is a small fort on which it is customary to hoist a flag to report ships passing the strait. This is also that ships will get wet when they can not hold on the harbor of Samboanga: there are, it is said, some pearl oysters.

Samboanga's governor is a lieutenant-colonel, assisted by of a commander of the place having the rank of sargente mayor. There was established a small customs branch of that Manila, for use by merchants in the Philippines who want to trade with the archipelago of Solou and the tribes surrounding. The administrator of that customs shall wear the title of commissioner or contador. Ships passing by Samboanga find food and fresh water there; they there are very well received and usually receive, at their crossing the strait, the visit of one of the naval officers from this small station, which only has a few boats gunboats.

Around the fort, there are some cultivated fields; but their product is not enough for the maintenance of its inhabitants, to whom it is necessary to send provisions of the capital. This territory, whose temperature is soft and the air very healthy, pay no tribute; which makes it difficult to know even approximately, the population.

PROVINCE OF CALAMIANES.

The province that bears this name consists of several islands, one of which gave it the name under which it is known. This is where the Spaniards settled the first presidios of the Philippines; they contained there the Moros they were prisoners. These islands form a group located north of the island of Paragua and south of the banc of Apo; there are four of them, namely: Busuagan, also called Calamianes; Coron, Linacapan and Iloë; some small islets more; and to form the province, you have to add a small portion of the northern part of the island Paraguay, the rest of which is independent.

This province is one of the least inhabited; she is in somehow forgotten, being located quite out of the center of the Philippine archipelago, but it would be one of the bigger and perhaps the richest of all, if the island of Paragua as a whole was subject; it contains the six following pueblos:

Tatay.	585 tributos,	2,925 hab.
Cuyo..	1,422	7,110
Agutaya.	573	1,865
Culiong.	535 ½	2,668
Dumaran. . } *Mission*. . . }	292	1,460
		16,028

Tatay, capital of the province of Calamianes, is located on the eastern coast of the island of Paragua or Palawan, by 11 ° 11 'north latitude and 117 ° 24' east longitude of Paris. Poor and miserable, this pueblo is defended by a small fort against incursions of the Moros; his church is of this kind of construction called pampanga, of which we have already had occasion to speak, and his royal house, likewise that all other dwellings, is in nipa. The air is there unhealthy, and foreigners are not there for a fortnight without feeling the first bouts of intermittent fever.

We will not take it upon ourselves to decide whether it comes that the land is too low or that the inhabitants do not want to bother to go out and find spring water in the mountains.

The island of Paragua is tall, long and narrow; it is located southwest of the Calamianes and north of the island of Borneo. This island is very populated; it contains, besides capital, the four small pueblos of Barbacan, Silanga, Dinlo and Pancol, who are not placed on the board, because they do not pay tribute. All are located on the coast; but there is only Silanga who presents an anchorage covered. The inhabitants of the independent part of the island live in the wild and are very miserable; their physiognomy resembles that of the Bisayas; but they have skin a little darker and the hair a little frizzy, which proves that they are formed by a mixture of Negritos and Malay, but not quite enough yet fused together so that the distinctive characters of both races have disappeared and changed as in Manila. This observation makes us persist more than ever in our opinion, according to which, in the Tagales and others indios, there is really a mixture of Negritos and Malays. Moreover, the savages of Paragua do not show any Japanese or Chinese character; they go almost naked and get save fright as soon as they see a white appear: they are not naturally wicked; but it is necessary be wary of them because they are always armed with small blowguns by which they launch poisoned arrows with an extraordinary accuracy of look: they are serve to go bird hunting.

As for natural products, the island of Paragua offers a lot of relationship with that of Borneo. In order to give an idea, we'll extract the following details from a published report by order of T. R. P. Provincial Augustinian Recollects, brother Blaso de las Mercedes. This island abounds, he says, in wax and nutmeg large and round; it is believed that it produces camphor like the island of Borneo. We find the finest and brightest white bulbs, which are of such great value, even in the Philippines; we do it Balao oil. The animals found there are between others, the porcupine, squirrels of different species, a small animal whose urine is of an excessively foul odor, flying squirrels, like bats, with membranes instead of feathers. It is claimed that there is also leopards. The birds are very varied: we see parrots of several species, green turtledoves, white, dagger, brown and others; species of nightingales with a delicious song; of the peacocks whose colors are more glittering but which are smaller than those in India.

The veins of iron and white vitriol (iron sulfate) that frequently we meet at a short distance from the sea have judged that the high mountains of the island contain rich mines of this metal. There are many rivers and delicious fountains. We never felt any tremors as in the neighboring islands of Agutayo and from Cuyo; but there are frequent thunderstorms accompanied deafening thunderclaps.

Residents of this province are reluctant to work; they do not bother to cultivate the land, content to burn the grass and trees of the mountains to sow the rice in their place. It's for fishing that they have the most decided taste; they engage in it with passion; but also their coasts abound in fish. Excellent fishing of the balate, turtles and pearls; because we find in the country of highly skilled divers. Surrounding islands, and especially those of the western part, not far from the Point de Cabule, to the north, a large quantity of these precious nests, built by the kind of swallow called

salangane, in the least accessible caves of the rocks that line the shore of the sea. We are not well okay so far on the matter of which these nests are compounds: it seems, however, that it is a kind of gluten transparent that these birds make out of their beak in form of thread and that they intertwine with a wonderful art, thus continuing until the nest took the figure and the suitable size. Moreover, these nests, which today still, are abundant, will become increasingly rare and will eventually disappear altogether, if we persist in the pernicious habit of removing them before the little ones are hatched. It is in December that these industrious birds begin to build their nests; the eggs hatch in May and the young are quick to take their growth: it is then time to remove the nests, as well as we do it in Solou and other places. But like we have just said, the inhabitants of Calamianes, by following a false calculation, seize it as soon as they have acquired a certain width; also the swallows begin to desert the island, and we already see the impoverishment harvests.

To get these nests, we have to make a species hunting that is not safe. Men armed with torches are suspended by ropes along the walls of the steepest rocks and thus enter their caves and even in the smallest crevices. Nests have the size and about the shape of an orange quarter, and are applied by one of their sides against the rock. We distinguishes several qualities of birds' nests: the whitest and the finest are paid from 40 to 50 piastres (250 francs) on 22 oz. The grand prize that the Chinese attach to it comes mostly from the so-called aphrodisiac virtue they attribute to them. It seems, moreover, that they are very nourishing and able to restore exhausted forces. The second quality, which is less clear and pulls on the yellow, is called *sandacan*, and one to which many feathers remain attached is worth only 2 piastres and a half cati.

The Chinese take care to clean the nests well before delivering them for consumption. The Solouans do not content, as we have just said, to wait the favorable moment to begin their hunt; they take still the precaution of cleaning the front caves the time of laying. We should do the same in Paragua, and it would be up to the gobernadorcillo to ensure conservation of laying eggs, otherwise a considerable trade object will soon be lost to the colony.

Among the other islands in the province of Calamianes, Busuagan is the most fertile, and it also provides shelters for the ships that release there. The pueblo of Culion's was founded in 1622 by one of the first Recollect fathers who came to make the spiritual conquest of these provinces. The territory of these two islands is fertile, though mountainous; he produces abundantly all that sows there; but the fields are devastated by the immense quantity of birds that fall there. Deer, wild boars, monkeys and rats, which are also very numerous, contribute to the ravage of cultivated.

The island of Cuyo, surrounded by small islets, located between the province of Antique and the island of Paragua, about 29 leagues of Calamianes, 17 at the tip of Tubigon, on the island of Panay, and 16 and a half from Dumaran and Semerrera, is very crowded, though very small, its inhabitants are laborious, affable and courageous. There is food of all kinds and ships can make water there. His boats trade with the island of Paragua and the others surrounding islands. This small island is very remarkable in many ways: its inhabitants are moving away from those of all the others by their complexion, which is much more clear; by their customs, by their language, and by their civilization, much more advanced. Cuyo is defended by a fort with some pieces of cannon; it presents a small port on the north-west side.

Lalutaya or Agutaya is located northwest of Cuyo, from which it is four or five leagues distant; she is covered with rocks, where it scarcely grows than coconut palms. The inhabitants raise poultry and are reduced to selling their coconut on the coast of Antique to receive rice in exchange; they also raise sheep and indulge in Balate fishing. There is a small fort in this island.

Dumaran is an island located east of Paragua, 6 miles away from its coast and about 9 from Taytay; its population is very poor and only deals with Balate fishing. We can, near this island as with others, find a shelter and wet in certain seasons of the year. Around these islands, dependent on Calamianes, there are more fifty small islets and countless rocks, all of which together, can be called the group of Cuyo. It's in the small straits they form and on the benches that we fishing a large quantity of balate and turtles, while that the caves that offer the rocks conceal an ample harvest of nests of salanganes.

The province of Calamianes, regardless of gold pick up and other items of commerce that we have spoken, supply quantity and very good wax quality, honey, rice, vegetables, fruits and many pigs and poultry. There are all the animals other provinces. Its territory is very fertile; its mountains are covered with trees of every kind; his although generally bad and dangerous, good ports and safe anchorages.

MARIANAS ISLANDS.

The Marianas form a small archipelago of seventeen groups of small islands and islets, including the government of Philippines made a province, even though they are far from it nearly 60 leagues. These islands were the first lands of the Pacific Ocean where Magellan landed. He embarked food, which still abounds today; but, as it was stolen by the inhabitants, who are singularly arranged in this way to obtain the objects they desire, he named them Islands of Thieves (de los Ladrones). They form a continuous chain, extending from north to south, on a space of about 150 leagues. Later, their first name was changed to Marianas.

The Spanish government sends Philippines a governor whose residence is in Agaña, which was during long time the place of release of galleons of Acapulco. This governor commands to a small garrison, and he has under his orders some lower employees placed in Umata, in Ayat, in Rota and other places. These islands, which are almost abandoned, have only a small population. Even though the air healthy and fertile soil, they are poorly cultivated, and the inhabitants give for reason that the rats are so numerous, they devour all the crops. Moreover, the Mariannese are good and hospitable, and European ships have all the easier to refuel, that many of them speak Spanish, although their natural language be the chamorro.

It is Legaspi, first governor of the Philippines, who brings the Mariana Islands to the Spanish crown. The Jesuits were the first religious who settled there, and, when they were expelled, they were replaced by the augustinian récollects. Queen Doña Maria de Asturias had made the recovery costs of the Jesuits and had placed, moreover, a sum of 21,000 piastres for maintenance and defense from this colony, plus 5,000 piastres for a college who was to take care of the instruction of the indios. We wanted make these islands an important scale for the New Spain.

It is impossible to accurately indicate the population for Marianas, because it does not pay tribute: it is less, certain that she is not numerous. Statements made in 1858 it brought it to 6,982 persons. The alkalde receives a treatment because he's supposed not to find it, otherwise enough resources. The government is also sending provisions for the troops, which form a total of 160 men, including the commander (sargente mayor), three lieutenants and three second lieutenants.

The most considerable of these islands, going back to the north, are Guam, Saypan, Rota and Tinian.

Guam or San Ignacio de Agana is the main; it encloses the small town of Agana. This capital of the Marianas, governor's residence, consists of six hundred houses, fifty of which are of stone; the streets are clean, well kept and regularly pierced. All houses are distributed in the same way, each forming two rooms. We get there would, in some respects, believe in Spain or, at least, in the environs of Manila; because not only the inhabitants there speak Spanish, but they have kept some of the Spanish manners.

Some pieces of artillery are placed around the palace of the governor and served by natives. We notice in the city, a college, a primary school, spinning mills, barracks and some vestiges of old great monuments. There are gardens where the most fruit is grown delicious; fresh food and vegetables are available account. Its population is 4,680 inhabitants.

The small village of Mongmon, near Agana, produces corn, rice and tobacco.

Umata, which is the most important pueblo of the island after Agaña, has a palace for the governor, built partly in stone, part of teak wood; a very simple church, a old convent, a fort that commands the bay, a hospital: its position is delicious, and although the houses are in nipa, the village offers a great appearance of cleanliness. The houses are surrounded by coconut trees and of orange trees that give delicious fruits. We find there banana trees, and tobacco and taro are grown there. Its 500 inhabitants, although poor, appear happy and content with their fate; they raise pigs and poultry.

Pago, located on the eastern side of the island, has a casa real, a church and a convent built by the Jesuits.

The islands of Tinian and Rota are remarkable for ruins of vast monuments they contain; it's that which made one think that in a very remote period he had established civilized nations that had built palaces where today we find only bamboo houses. It does not appear, however, that these nations, what whether they were Chinese or Japanese; because these leave, wherever they go, distinctive characters that after a long series of centuries it is still impossible to misunderstand. In Rota Island, these ruins are composed several columns, placed so as to suggest that they were once part of a circus. The inhabitants of these islands designate these ruins under the name of monuments old ones (de los antiquos). The countryside is beautiful admirable on the island of Rota; she is covered with a very active vegetation and produces fruit in abundance, between other watermelon, and delicious vegetables.

There's a lot of cotton trees from which one could draw a very large left. The bats are monstrous, and independently rats, which are the plague of the island, one finds there wild pigs and deer in such large numbers that it kills 800 to 1,000 a year. It contains twenty houses and 450 inhabitants.

Tinian Island is almost deserted and devoid of cultivation.

These islands are poor today, but they could to become a good report if they were better cultivated. In addition to the products we have indicated, they are covered of forests, providing, among other timber, the precious teak, and magnificent meadows where one fattens considerable livestock; they produce a little bit of rice, sugar cane, maize, cassava, Maranta arundinacea (arrowroot), sweet potatoes, sago, coffee, coconuts and some wild muscades ; but the inhabitants are indolent and lazy and do not do not want to indulge in the culture of the land.

There are no minerals in the Mariana Islands.

The governor judges the lawsuits, and the gobernadorcillos them run. The big criminals, when he shows up, this which is rare, are sent to Manila. The Marianas were formerly a place of deportation where they sent, from the Philippines, persons convicted of certain particular crimes.

The whole industry of these islands is limited to a few spinning mills established in Agaña. Their trade is almost that in the sale of food and some products from the country to the ships that touch them and find them always a hospitable welcome. Carolinas praos came to make some exchanges, although a distance of 200 leagues separates these islands from their country.

CHAPTER XVI.
CIVIL AND JUDICIAL GOVERNMENT OF THE PHILIPPINES.

The Governor General.-The Auditor.-The Civil Tax. - The Real Acuerdo.- Treatment of the Governor General. - The alcaldes mayors. – The gobernadorcillos. - The bourgeois guard.- The cabezas de barangay. - The bilangos. - Special Administration of the province of Tondo. - Ayuntamiento of Manila. - Judicial administration. - She is defective. - Slowness of criminal trials - Real audiencia.-Taxes. - Proof of the white rooster for the Buddhist Chinese.

The Philippine government is divided into two parts quite distinct, although the supreme authority, in one and in the other, be together in the same hands, that is to say in those of the Governor General: these two parts are the civilian government and the military government. In this chapter, only the first one will be discussed.

The governor or captain general of the Philippine Islands, to which the Mariana Islands are united, must necessarily be a general officer with at least the rank Marshal of Camp: he is sent from Spain with titles Governor, President of the Supreme Court (audiencia), vice-patron*, subdelegate judge of the administration of letters, posts and estafettes, director of the troops, captain General and Commander-in-Chief of the Navy.

** The King being the patron of the Philippine Islands, this title announces that the governor enjoys the same rights as the king he represents; he answers to that of viceroy.*

He summarizes in these titles the many powers he is invested; this is the practice in Spain, and this is done to that in no case can we deny him these powers.

However, as it would be impossible for him to be able to fill directly and by itself so many different functions. Special people are added to him for this purpose. The first of these persons is the assessor (*juez lego*), a kind of responsible minister to whom all important business; he discusses them, makes his report and drafts an order that the governor has only the right to sign. Sometimes also the civil tax is consulted in these same business, and it is rare for a decision to be made without notice of one of these ministers, jurisconsultes one and the other. When they do not agree on one point, the governor slice the question by invoking his title deputy boss; then, after deciding, he seeks the approval of the king. There is also serious cases where the governor consults what one call *Real acuerdo* or *Junta de Acuerdo*, assembly who, under his presidency, is composed of the president of the Supreme Tribunal (court), Dean of Oidors, Tax, Assessor, of the marine auditor, the *contador mayor* and the intendant general. He particularly addresses this assembly when there is some dissent between him and the supreme court, which, although enjoying, in certain respects, a power that even balances his own, can see nevertheless cancel its decisions by the Governor, acting in his capacity as Vice boss. This title once conferred on him immense power to appoint his successor in case he comes to die.

The governor's salary was fixed at first to 2,000 ducats by Legaspi, plus the rights attached to his position; he was increased to 4,000 piastres, then to 8,000, then to 15,400. In 1819 it was reduced to 10,000 piastres, and finally after various fluctuations, delivered, in 1850, to 15,400 piastres (about 70,000 francs).

As we have seen above, the archipelago of the Philippines is divided into thirty-three provinces. Each of these provinces is administered under the governor general by a governor particular, which also bears the title of alkalde mayor or corregidor. These places are usually conferred by the king directly, or, if there is a vacancy in the six-year interval, the Governor General calls the alcalde for three years, pending the approval of the king, which sometimes confirms the choice and maintains the new alkalde for three years more, sometimes replacing it with another person; sometimes even we name several who arrive and wait for their turn.

When these administrators carry the title of governor, they must be a military; they have to be at least lieutenants, and these places are not disdained even by colonels. The provinces of Cavite, Samboanga, Marianas, Caraga, Samao, Iloilo, Antique, of Capiz, Albay, Camarines Sur and Tayabas have governors: the leaders of the other provinces have the title of alkalde. All these chefs fill simultaneously administrative or judicial functions; they are, in addition, charged with receiving the tribute that the indios pay to the king and call the *real haber*. These last functions leading to financial liability, they are required to provide security for a sum of 15 to 20,000 piastres, depending on the size of the province is entrusted. The governor of Cavite is the only exception to this rule; because a lieutenant of justice is his deputy for that part of his load.

The alcaldes have the rank of *capitanes a guerra* and carry distinctive marks, although they are most often lawyers or even ordinary citizens; they are allowed to trade on

their behalf, if they give up part of their salary, in addition to which they are entitled to so much of the tribute they receive.

Here is a table of the amount of the alkade's treatments:

		And he pays, to have the right to trade
Albay	600 piastr.	125
Bulacan	600	100
Bataan.	300	60 ½
Batangas	600	150
Cagayan	600	500
Calamianes	600	500
Capiz	300	150
Camarines Sur	600	170
Caraga	600	500
Cebu	600	180
Negros Island	600	80
Ilocos Sur	600	125
Ilocos Norte	300	125
Iloïlo	600	200
Laguna	600	137
Leyte	300	123
Misamis	600	80
Mindoro	1,000	80
Pampanga	300	241,7
Pangasinan	600	250
Samar	600	125
Tayabas	600	90
Zambales	600	40

Nothing is more boring in the country than permission is given to alcaldes to trade for their account; as a result they think only of making a fortune at the expense of their subordinates, whose first duty should be, on the contrary, to defend the interests: they vex and oppress them, and make them find enemies in men sent to be their protectors.

Alkaldes are required to govern their respective provinces, in accordance with the royal ordinances, as well as those that were written by the *junta de acuerdo* of the Philippines in the year 1768, and which are entitled *ordenanzas of buen gobierno*. These regulations are the highest honor to the worthy general Aguilar, then governor of the Philippines; they are moral laws, just, both protective and severe, making known to all members of the social body their rights and duties; preventing the encroachment of temporal power over the spiritual, defending the freedoms of the indios against all oppression; by them schools were established, measures were ordered for the destruction swarms of grasshoppers and their eggs (*locton*); use to make funds from the comunidad of each village was rule; they even took care of

dalagas, young girls, so they would not have to sweep the churches nor to crush the rice in the hangars of the doctrine (chapter XXX). All these prescriptions are unfortunately not as strictly executed that they should be; so by example, despite their peremptory provisions, the funds of comunidad continue to be paid to the treasury, frustrating thus the indios to whom they belong, since they have trained themselves for the maintenance of their communes.

The alcalde, with his assessor, lawyer, forms the provincial court; according to the rule he must be assisted by a notary, but that does not happen everywhere.

The alcalde lies in the chief town of his province, where he occupies a kind of palace called royal house (*casa real*).

Provinces are subdivided into communes, or *pueblos*, at the head of each of whom is placed a *sulbaterian chief*, taken from the natives of the country and who has the title of *gobernadorcillo* (little governor). Every year, in January, the twelve oldest electors of the pueblo come together in the common house and elect three candidates, in the presence of the alcalde, his notary, the priest and all the people who want to attend. These three candidates are presented to the governor general so that from that number he choose a *gobernadorcillo*. The preference usually falls on whoever is first on the list. We would agree that it would be difficult to find anything more constitutional.

In the Bisaya, it is the alkalde mayor which names the *gobernadorcillos*, because of the distance from the capital and the difficulty of communications; but this appointment is only an object of form, since it is enjoined to name always the first on the list.

Gobernadorcillos, or mayors of villages, are assisted in their functions by lieutenants and alguazils of justice, chosen by their respective leaders from a list of candidates presented by the same voters and the locals from the community.

Finally, in every provincial capital, there is a kind of native guard composed of sixty-eight, twenty or so, thirty men armed with rifles and commanded by a sub-officier which they call capitán, under the orders of the governor or the alkalde of the province; there are also the *bantay*, a kind of sentry, or a body of guard, where one maintains light at night, placed in the streets and even at from the smallest pueblos; they are equipped with bells for sound the alarm. The custody of the *bantay* is entrusted to seven men, inhabitants of the pueblo, who watch with native sentinels in the chief towns and correspond of a bantay to another by giving frequent blows of bells and shouting, *Qui vive*? to the passerby; finally the *alguazil mayor*, a kind of police commissioner, completes the organization of police of the pueblos; he is placed under the orders of the gobernadorcillo, and all together ensure safety and security public tranquility, pursue, evildoers and keep the prisons.

Chinese *mestizos*, when there are enough of them in one place, enjoy the privilege of naming their own gobernadorcillo, which they choose among them, but which always remains inferior to the native gobernadorcillo and can never, like this, replace the alkalde during his absence. It is especially in the pueblos of Viñan, of Tondo and Cebu that we find *mestizo* gobernadorcillos. Natives know, in general, very well enforce their rights, and the government carefully maintains the rivalry that exists between them and the *mestizos*, jealousy that prevents them from uniting against him.

The Chinese proper, many in the pueblo of Binondo, have also obtained the right to choose their gobernadorcillo among those of them who have embraced Catholicism; they also have their lieutenants and their alguazils. In the meantime, their language, which nobody understands, keeps them more separated than the indios from the rest of the population; also they form somehow a government in the government and they get along with each other at wonder.

Gobernadorcillos have at the same time the functions of mayor and justice of the peace; they are loaded, each in their pueblo, everything that concerns the municipal authority, discussions about the land boundary and the property palms, keeping the policeman; they get along with the priests to oblige all the natives to follow the precepts of religion; they judge in the last resort the lawsuits civilians up to two gold taels (220 francs). They begin criminal case investigation and send in the capital of the province the result of their information; they monitor the recovery of tributes and the treasure money.

These magistrates enjoy a great deal of their pueblos; they are given the title of *don* and the title of *maguinoo* capitan; their wives have the *doña* and the title of *capitana*; he is even expressly recommended to the alcaldes of the deal with consideration and make them sit down all once they come to the *casa real*: the priests are also required to show them great respect.

We have yet to talk about one of the most important institutions from the country; it is that of *cabezas de barangay*, that is to say, barangay or family leaders, who are appointed every year among the notables of the pueblos, but whose the election must be confirmed by the governor of the province. These cabezas are specially charged with the recovery of the tributes, and each one of them has forty-five to fifty in his assessment. Here's how these tributes are calculated: a husband and a wife without children pay a half tribute; and minor children, more or less according to their number. It is generally expected that each whole tribute represents five individuals, and that is why, in the description of the provinces we have multiplied the number of tributes by five to find their population. A few people, actually, multiply by six and a half, but that's wrongly. As for the sum at which the tribute rises, it is of 14 reals of piata (9 francs 20 c.), of which there are 11 reals for the government and 5 for the Church. The cabeza answers tributes that he perceives; thus the singles majors of twenty-five men or women pay each their demi-tributo; but as they often run away to change province, the cabeza is then obliged to pay for them. The deficit is sometimes so great, that the cabeza himself is unable to fill it, and he is put in prison until he paid. The cabeza remains in his barangay, in order to have all the members continuously under the eyes and to ensure that everyone acquits to his turn the chores to which he is held towards his pueblo, as, for example, the service of the Bantay; he is also their natural referee in some cases. In poor provinces he receives and transmits to the gobernadorcillo tribute in kind that the inhabitants bring to him. The cabezas are the defenders from the families that make up their barangay, and are the twelve oldest of the pueblo who elect the candidates for the square of Gobernadorcillo. In some provinces the outgoing gobernadorcillo and the three nominated candidates to replace him appoint the lieutenants of justice and the alguazils.

The institution of the *cabezas de barangay* (barangay chiefs) was borrowed from the indios at whom it was found established during the conquest from the Philippines; they formed, at that time, a kind of hereditary nobility. Heredity has been preserved today: when one of these places becomes vacant, the appointment successor is made by the Superintendent of Finance in the pueblos surrounding the capital, and in distant provinces, by the Alcalde, on the proposal of the gobernadorcillo and the presentation of the other members of the barangay; it's the same for new creations as from time to time requires the increase of the population. The cabeza, his wife and the oldest of his children are exempt from tribute; after three years of well done service, they are given the title of *don* and that of pasado, and they remain exempt from rendering any personal service; they can be elected gobernadorcilios. Votes are taken by secret ballot, and the slightest infraction of the law results in the nullity of the election.

In some provinces the mestizos and the Chinese have, independently gobernadorcillos, officers of justice which among the Chinese are called *bilanggos*; they also have their cabezas of barangay, charged with perceiving their tributes, which for the mestizos are more important than for Indios. They are divided into four classes: that of servants, porters, gardeners and peddlers whose tribute is 12 piastres; shopkeepers, edible merchants and caterers pay 24 piastres; the merchants of a more high order 48 piastres and big traders 50 piastres. The alkalde receives 2 percent on indio tributes and 3 percent on those of the mestizos in the rich provinces this right brings in considerably at the alkalde, when there is no waste in the assessment of which he is obligated to the treasury.

By the foregoing, we see that the administration of the islands Philippines is based on very liberal foundations, and they were thus posed since the beginning of the conquest: these Such wise and paternal institutions have earned Spain the conservation of a colony whose inhabitants enjoy our opinion, more freedom, happiness and tranquility than those of any other nation.

We failed to say above that, by an order recently returned he was created a particular governor for the Bisaye, however, under the captain general; but we do not know if anyone has ever been invested of these new functions.

The province of Tondo, which is that of the capital, has also his alkalde mayor, notwithstanding the presence of the governor general; he resides in Tondo, with his alguazils and his teniente mayor of jusiicia, species of sub-alkalde. In this province of Tondo, there is, besides the Indian gobernadorcillos mixed and Chinese, who all depend on the alkalde mayor, the ayuntamiento or municipality of Manila, body that enjoys extended powers and of high consideration: its organization dates back to the year 1574, that adelantado Don Miguel Lopez de Legaspi composed it of the most Spanish citizens recommendable from Manila; his collective title is excellentisimo. It consists of two ordinary alcaldes, chosen among the candidates nominated by the governor, twelve members and a notary commissioner (escribano contador). Of the two alcaldes, one is for the interior of the city and the other for the suburbs (de a fuera); Tayuntamiento represents the insignia and most loyal city of Manila, to which the king granted in 4596 coats of arms and privileges, with the title of very-noble. The members of this municipality place wherever they please in public holidays. At visiting prisons, ordinary alcaldes have their place in the side of the oidors; their jurisdiction extends

within a radius of 5 leagues from Manila, so that in this radius the trials can be worn indifferently, either in front of the alcalde mayor of Tondo, either in front of the ordinary alcalde of a *fuera*, even before the court of the hearing.

Ordinary alkaldes are specially charged with the inner and outer police of the city, of the games, vagrants and thieves, and they have, for this purpose, alguazils and ushers at their orders; they hold hearings in the city, where they judge in first instance and serve as civil court and justices of the peace: this quality, they are assisted by an assessor.

The functions of the ayuntamiento are to maintain the cleanliness and the paving of the streets, and all that concerns the public health; roads, lighting, cemetery; and ensure that tranquility is not disturbed. The weakest part of the Philippine administration is that of justice, which is due to several different causes that we will try to develop, not without experience some fear that the confusion that reigns in this part slips, despite ourselves, into what we say about it.

We have seen above that, in the provinces, it is the alcaldes, corregidors or governors who are in charge to serve justice; but, as they are, for the most part, military personnel and that they are above all concerned with the tribute and to enrich oneself through trade, it would be necessary that things are done in a regular and proper way, that jurisconsult assessors were attached to them; but it is not so, and the least difficulty, even in the more remote provinces must reside in Manila.

Let's start by seeing what happens in criminal cases. The gobernadorcillo of the pueblo where the crime was committed, the clerk receives the first statements in the language of his province; because it is rare that he knows how to speak Spanish, although the ordinances require it. These declarations are communicated to the alkalde mayor, who, having no sworn interpreter, has them translated into Spanish by an indio who somehow knows this language for being for some time domestic in Manila; then, using of this same pseudo-interpreter, the gobernadorcillo continues, for his part, the investigation of the case according to the data, always very imperfect and often even erroneous. That done, he sends a copy of everything to an assessor from Manila, for him to dictate to him the conduct that he has to hold: but the opportunities to match with the capital are not very frequent, so that pieces often remain whole months without returning, especially when the fact happened in Bisaya and in a remote *alcaldia*. Arriving in Manila in the shapeless state where the pieces came out of the hands of the alkalde, most often the assessor understands nothing; he is obliged to ask explanations: we give them as best we can. News difficulties arise; the pieces are still going back, and he is thus wasting valuable and unfortunately irreparable time, because the witnesses missed sometimes good faith, sometimes memory, and that often they even disappear without being able to find them.

But the first difficulties are finally lifted, and this is to plead the case. Now the provincial court has neither Advocate General, nor defenders for the accused. The alcalde supplements by indios that he is responsible for performing these functions, and who, on their side, very embarrassed by their position, send seek advice from Manila on each incident that gets up. A provisional judgment as such, however, is pronounced; but then it must be the case, to receive a decision definitively, be brought before the Supreme Court of Manila, where it finally finds competent judges. But

precisely for this reason, the tax promotor, in charge of criminal and protective affairs of the indios, finding them ordinarily obscurities and irregularities without number, is obliged to send everything back to the province. We will not be surprised to learn that very often the defendants die of old age in prison, before the judgment of their business. A lot of these disadvantages come from of the incapacity of alkaldes mayores, on whose choice we are not scrupulous enough.

Civil lawsuits are hardly better treated in the provinces as criminal cases; they entail huge expenses and a considerable loss of time. In Manila, we are, in this respect, a little less unfortunate, even though that all too often the hearing decides the issue by a stop from *no hay lugar* (there is no need). But because we just named the *audiencia*, it's time for us to occupy this respectable institution, large and beautiful, the only one of its kind in the Philippines and which forms a counterbalance to the vast powers of the Governor General.

The *real audiencia*, which is the supreme court of the Philippines, both civil and criminal, is also responsible for contentious affairs of the treasury; it regulates the skill of private justices [juzgados privativos); it still brings together many other attributions and a great deal of authority, partly derived from the Indian Code (recompilation of the Indias) and various ordinances and hindquarter decrees.

This court consists of only one room which to hear and judge, in first, second and third instance, all the trials that arise in the thirty-three provinces of the Philippines. The Governor General is President of the court; he has under him a regent, five judges or oidors and two taxpayers or attorneys general, one for the civilian and the other for the criminal.

It is rare that the number of members whose audiencia is compose either in full; for although the law of the Indies defends to entrust them with any function foreign to those of court, they are, on the contrary, overloaded. Of this number are the Superintendency of Finance, the auditoria of War and of the Navy, the administration of the property of the deceased and the absent, which gives rise to affairs of the greatest importance. The upper junta of the financial dispute is composed of three judges of the audiencia, presided over by the Superintendent subdelegated general of finance; three judges judging to the (sala) court of justice which judges on appeal the decisions of the mayor court and the court of accounts; finally the oidors and the civil tax attend the juntas of the farms. A oidor is entrusted annually with the functions of judge of the brotherhoods; another is an assessor of the cruzada and *compose*, with the commissioner and the civil tax, the court of the bubble; another one is director of monte pio or pensions cases for widows of employees; a fourth is protective and judge of slaves and freedmen: but these last functions are purely nominal today, since, for a long time, there are no more slaves in the Philippines. One of the oidors is judge of the hospitals and houses of refuge; he is responsible for sending married men back to Spain: another is what is called *juez privativo*; he judges civil cases up to 500 piastres.

The prosecutors of the king (fiscal) are specially charged with the protection of the indios and Chinese; they must take up the defense of the individuals of these nations all that, believing themselves victims of some injustice, they claim their assistance.

It is conceivable that this multiplicity of works must delay indefinitely the administration of justice, especially for provinces, more than half of which is located off the island Luzon, with whom they can only communicate when the monsoon is favorable.

We will finish what concerns the administration of justice by noticing that those of the Chinese who continue to profess the religion of Buddha, unable to lend oath before the courts, are subject to particular kind before being admitted to testify. The main is the test of the white rooster, by which we are sure to tear away the truth. A Chinese being called in front of the alcalde, we start by doing some preparatory ceremonies, after which he is asked if he has told the truth and if, to prove it, he will have the courage to cut off a white rooster's head. "Think, tell the interpreter and the gobernadorcillo, that, if you do not confess the truth, the blood of that cock that will flow will be that of your parents and that your family will be unhappy forever. " At these words, if he has prevaricated, it does not fail to be disconcerted and everything confess; for if, persistent in his saying, he cut off the head of the cock, and after that we could convince him of perjury, he would be pursued by public contempt, and nobody would want no longer to speak to him. We only indicated that part of the formalities that accompany this test; the rest would have dragged us too far.

Criminal trials tried in Philippine hearing from 1837 to 1841 (inclusive).

ANNÉES.	CRIMES ET DÉLITS.									CONDAMNATIONS			
	Rébellion et conspiration.	Meurtre.	Vol et escroquerie.	Incendie.	Rassemblements et affiches séditieuses.	Faux et parjure.	Immoralité et scandale.	Blessures et mauvais traitements.	Total des causes.	à mort.	aux galères.	Destitution et autres peines correctionnelles.	Total des condamnations.
1837	0	43	54	3	0	3	6	5	114	6	90	17	122
1838	0	108	145	6	4	7	52	60	382	6	140	169	315
1839	0	74	149	1	5	2	45	41	317	6	192	46	244
1840	2	83	165	5	1	3	41	54	295	7	131	19	157
1841	0	131	216	12	2	5	66	67	499	3	173	77	253
	2	439	670	25	12	19	212	227	1607	28	735	328	1091

CHAPTER XVII.
ECCLESIASTIC GOVERNMENT AND WORKS PAGES; HOLIDAYS AND PUBLIC CEREMONIES.

Archbishopric and bishoprics. - Religious institutes. - Beaterío. - Hospitals. - Mercy. - Brotherhoods. - Fund of works pies. – Caisses municipalities. – Health Board and vaccination. - Public holidays.-Processions. - Novenas. - Pilgrimages. - Political parties. - Patron celebrations in villages. - Works of the missionaries.-They teach agriculture, trade industry to the Indio. - They introduce new cultures. - Tobacco is the only plant that has not been brought by them. - Betel. - Current state of missions. - Influence and authority of the clergy. -The Philippines is lost if it is taken away.

The clergy of the Philippines, a Catholic Orthodox, recognizes, of course, the pope for spiritual leader, the king from Spain for patron and governor, captain general, for vice-patron. The city of Manila was erected into an archbishop's palace, in 1595, by a brief of Pope Clement VIII: his archbishop can be viewed, in some way, as the patriarch from the Far East. It's in Manila that come crowned the bishops of Cochin China, and almost all the missions of this part of the globe recognize its supremacy. He has a secretary, an archivist and an officiality.

Three suffragan bishops, those of Nueva-Segovia, Nueva-Caceres and Cebu, share with the Archbishop of Manila the spiritual government of the Philippines.

From the archbishopric of Manila depend on ten provinces, namely : Tondo, Bulacan, Pampanga, Bataan, Zambales, Nueva Ecija, Laguna, Batangas, Cavity, Mindoro. These provinces include one hundred and sixty-eight parishes, of which one hundred and are served by the regular clergy and sixty-seven by the secular clergy.

The bishopric of Nueva-Segovia, whose seat is in Vigan as the chief town of Ilocos-South province, includes six provinces, know: Cagayan, Nueva-Biscaya, Pangasinan, Ilocos-south, Ilocos-North and the Batanes Islands; they contain eighty nineteen parishes, seventy-eight of which served by religious and eighteen by secular priests.

The Nueva-Caceres bishopric is based on the city of that name, chief town of the province of Camarines Sur. Four provinces make up the diocese, namely: Camarines Sur, Camarines Norte, Albay and Tayabas. Eighty-seven parishes are served by thirty religious and fifty-seven secular priests.

The seat of the bishopric of Cebu is in Cebu; his diocese composed of all Bisaye and the Mariana Islands, forming the remaining twelve provinces, and one hundred and forty-eight parishes served by ninety-five religious and fifty-three secular priests.

Total, four ecclesiastical provinces and five hundred and two parishes served by three hundred and four religious and a hundred ninety-five secular priests.

Here is the current state of religious institutes in the Philippines, for both men and women.

Augustinians shod. A provincial, a procurator general, a provincial secretary, a prior of the convent of Manila, a sub-prior, one hundred and thirty-two religious.

Franciscans. A provincial vicar, a secretary of the province, a guardian, a hundred and twenty-one religious.

Dominicans. The same dignitaries as the Augustinians and one hundred and sixteen religious.

Discalced Augustinians: The same dignitaries and sixty-six religious.

Order of Saint John of God, dedicated to the service of hospitals in Manila and Cavite; the second depends on the first and to his doctor. A provincial vicar, a secretary General, a Procurator General, a senior nurse, a great sexton and fifteen religious.

Poor Clares of the Order of St. Francis. A vicar, a procurator general, an abbess, a vicar (woman), a secretary (id.).

Other women's convents dedicated to particular purposes are:

The convent (beaterío)* of St. Catherine of Siena, founded in 1696 to teach Spanish girls to read, write, count, sew and Christian doctrine.

** There is no French word that responds precisely to that of Beaterio. In another part of this book, we have made it by that of beguinage, although the translation is not exact. The beaterío are women's convents, whose inhabitants do not bear, do not pronounce greetings and can return in the world whenever they want. These houses are always founded for the purpose of charity.*

It is composed of sixty, both religious and lay sisters, governed by a prioress elected by them. Twenty six young white girls are raised there.

The beaterio of San Sebastián de Calumpang. In 1719, four indio girls devoted themselves exclusively in the service of God and of Our Lady of Mt. Carmel. In 1755, the convent was organized under the dress of the Augustinian descalced. The nuns should not exceed the number of twelve. They do not pronounce vows; they elect, for all the three years, a prioress and live on alms and their work. Thus the priory of San Sebastián gives them, per year, 100 palay cavans and 500 piastres for them to sew the scapulars and wash the linen of the church and religious; the convent of Manila gives 200 palay cavans and 500 piastres so that they wash the linen of the sacristy and religious: they also receive students to whom they learn the same things as the nuns of St. Catherine. For those who are very young, the convent accepts those that parents want to give; those who can and want to work do not give anything; the others pay from 5 to 4 piastres per month, according to their fortune. This convent contains today twelve nuns, twenty-four high students, sixteen small, a boarding girl and some women widows or brides who went to boarding school.

The convent of St. Ignatius, founded in 1699, under the direction of the Jesuit fathers. It contains twenty-five nuns, fifty-nine convent sisters and fifty-five students who pay for their pension 4 piastres a month: Some of them, however, give only 2 or 5 piastres, because they attend the cooking and the laundry that is done once a week. Every year, in October, there is exercises, which are attended by several hundred indio women

who each pay 2 piastres for the time they go to the convent: this money is used to defray the preachers, confessors and the maintenance of those who thus come to take part in the retreat. The first goal of this foundation was to raise young Indian girls in the fear of God and teach them how to embroider, to sew and to read.

The convent of Sainte-Rose, also devoted to education young girls, dates back to the year 1750. The number of religious and that of the lay sisters are indeterminate.

The Convent of St. Rita de Pasig, founded in 1740, for the education of young indio orphans. The nuns, when they go to the parish church, wear the mantle of St. Augustine, but they do not pronounce the vows and do not take any commitment. Students are dressed like at home. The house is supported by alms of the faithful and by the work of the hands. When parents of students have the means, they contribute what they can; but the maximum is 2 piastres per month: in general, they are content to give some cabans of palay by year. Those who are quite poor and orphaned do not give anything. There are now, in this convent, sixteen nuns.

Two hospitals exist in Manila. That of San Juan de Dios, founded in 1596, by the brotherhood of the Holy Mercy. It consists of three halls and one hundred and twenty-seven beds, of which seventy-nine for men, forty for women, and eight for persons of distinction, members of the third order of St. Francis and priests.

The hospital of Saint-Lazare or lepers, founded in 1784, contains one hundred and six beds.

We were for a long time a doctor of the first of these two houses, and momentarily charged with the second.

The ecclesiastical government is naturally connected with what we call the *oeuvres pies* (obraspias). Here are those which are established in the Philippines.

At the head, we place the royal house of Mercy, brotherhood founded in 1594 by a Spanish priest named Juan Fernandez de Leon: it consists of a certain number of brothers, who each year choose a provenor and eleven MPs to manage the funds placed in this house. Built in 1610, the king took it in 1735 under his special protection. The funds are suitable for people who need it, either on mortgage or the big adventure, with deposit; accounts must be returned to the king every five years. The interest we derive from loaned funds is distributed in alms, in services for the dead, in dowries, bequeathed for hospitals, chapellenies, etc. A special fund, called the cajoncillo, is used for the maintenance of the Santa-Isabel College, for the education of young Spanish girls. We are unfortunately forced to admit that great abuses have crept into the administration of this establishment. Members who manage the funds are admitted as security for sums lent to the trade; they get along with the borrowers, and it is rare that the funds, once out of the crate, never enter it again: also the capital of this beautiful institution, which amounted to several millions, is it already almost completely absorbed, and the cajoncillo itself runs great risks.

Then comes the archconfraternity of the Most Blessed Sacrament, established in 1604 for perpetual adoration.

The brotherhood of Jesus-of-Nazareth, founded in 1651. Its goal is the exercise of Christian charity.

The third order of Saint Francis, to lead the souls to heaven by means of works of mercy and charity: Franciscan monks founded it in 1618.

The brotherhood of Notre-Dame-de-la-Solitude dates back to the year 1651. Its main purpose is the procession of the Holy Tomb, the evening of Good Friday.

The archconfraternity of the Most Holy Sacrament of Binondo. The congregation of St. Peter, apostle.

The venerable Third Order of Penance of St. Dominic, for works of charity and the good of souls.

The brotherhood of Notre-Dame-de-la-Pénitence, in the order of St. Augustine, for the service of God and the spiritual good of souls: it is established simultaneously in Manila and Cebu.

The venerable Third Order of St. Francis, at Sampaloc. This brotherhood was founded in 1729 primarily for the natives: we admit very few Spaniards.

In Cavite, there are two brotherhoods; one said of Our Father Jesus, and the other of the Blessed Sacrament and the blessed souls of purgatory.

The fund of works and godly legacies is an institution that we must not pass over in silence. In 1771, during the expulsion of the Jesuits, whose indelible stamp always impressed on all the establishments founded by them, either in Manila or in the provinces, their property was confiscated, and the management of these properties was entrusted to a commission specially appointed by the government; the values were deposited in government coffers and, since then, they are used to make mortgage loans to individuals or traders, and present a great resource for trade.

The *caisses des communes* (cajas de comunidad) are an institution that honors the people who had it the first idea but whose purpose is not followed as it should be, which unfortunately happens to many excellent measures taken in favor of the Philippine Islands. The funds of these caisses consist of the small contribution a half-real of a plata, a little more than 50 cents, that, in accordance with the law, must pay the indios and the Chinese. According to the established rule, these funds are allocated to construction and conservation of all works of interest the pueblos in particular, to the payment of the wages school teachers, vaccinators, defenders prisoners, singers and sacristans, etc.; they are administered by the Supreme Finance Commission, which place on mortgage, but a considerable part in it is used for expenses that are all different from those it should be dedicated.

We will finish this list of charitable institutions by the upper health board, dissolved in 1834 and restored since then, and by the Central Vaccine board, established, by order of the supreme government of the colony, December 20, 1806; a standing committee sits twice per week in a meeting room at the City Hall, both to vaccinate only to give free advice to everyone who shows up.

All the institutions we have just listed have for the primitive and fundamental purpose of bringing the whites together color races and consolidate the power of the government Spanish in a country so far from the metropolis. If this goal has been achieved, it is not the military forces, always small, to be attributed, but to the perseverance of the ministers of religion, whose constant solicitude has always made the happiness of these islands. We do not pretend to argue that everything is perfect in these various religious institutions; we too know very well by which they sin, but we affirm that their defects are only exceptional and that it would be wrong to judge them by that side only. We will repeat, from remainder, what we have already said in other places of this book is that the Philippines, which has been conquered through the patient work of the religious, would be lost forever, not only for Spain, but perhaps even for civilization, from the moment when the monastic orders would be abolished.

Although the description of public holidays seems to relate rather in terms of morals than the one we mention, let's write right now, however, like, in the Catholic holidays, almost all of these holidays are related more or less to religious ideas and ceremonies we have preferred to place here this description.

During the discovery of this archipelago, the indios who lived here were idolaters; today, thanks to the religious solicitude, they are all Catholics.

Each village has its church, its patron saint, its processions, his novenas; all become so many opportunities to attract and gather around the bell tower all the population of the surroundings, who, the religious ceremony ended, meets in groups, either to make a lunch solid, either to cool off with chocolate, cakes and various treats, and to go, at mealtime, to attend cockfighting, whose theater is often located very close to the church.

The *padre* or priest is for the indios a father, a friend, a censor; they listen to him on every occasion and have in him the greater confidence: it brings them together at certain times of the year to pray together, especially during Lent to sing the Passion, translated into tagales; two people sing it in the form of dialogue and on a compound air express. This exercise has a special charm for them, these people having a remarkable taste for music; sometimes even at the approach of the week holy, they gather in great numbers and sing in chorus for much of the night, worrying little to disturb the sleep of their neighbors.

Indios regularly attend mass, where they are attracted by the music that we hear there until the smaller villages, by the pomp which surrounds the holy sacrifice, by the desire to be part of the brotherhoods and to hold honorable positions there.

The publication of the bulle is a ceremony to which authorities, troops and music assist. Most beautiful procession is that of Corpus Christi. That day, all the inhabitants of the suburbs of Manila run into the interior of the city, whose doors are closed while the procession is outside. The archbishop, holding in his hand the Most Holy Sacrament, pass it over the flags of the regiments, which he tramples underfoot. The Governor General walk immediately after the canopy. This procession is the only one done by day; all the others are falling at night : the brightness of several thousand candles worn by the people who attend, the magnificence of the ornaments priests and

the clothes with which the saints are covered, paintings representing the passion, crucifixes of natural grandeur make it a unique show of its kind. Yes it is in a village that the procession takes place, it becomes the occasion of meetings and festivals of all kinds; fires of fireworks and bursts of small guns called *bersos* do not cease to be drawn during the procession and after his return. Indios never fail to attend these festivals, and if among them there is still some unfaithful, he is sure to return converted. A hermano or a Hermana mayor of the brotherhood are responsible for all costs of some very famous processions, costs which amount to more than 1,000 piastres (5,500 francs). On these occasions, paintings sails are stretched across the streets, whose pavement is sanded and strewn with flowers, while the facade of the houses is covered with brightly colored hangings. All the population has the right to free refreshments who use it.

We have already spoken, on another occasion, of the novena of Antipolo, its processions, its prayers, its pilgrimage and its baths of mineral water. Pilgrimages to the Sto. Niño of Cebu and its miracles, of which all the Bisaya resounds, are a source of consolation for the indios in all their sorrows; if it were taken away from them, how would we replaced it? What other religion would have for them the prestige and the power of the Catholic religion?

The clergy of the Philippines have great wealth, deposits of old donations kept and augmented by a well-understood economy, and it must be admitted that they make the most honorable use of it. He distributes incalculable alms and is always willing to lend money to industrious people who seek his assistance. Their conduct in this regard is above all praise and would suffice only to cover some of the wrongs attributed to the ecclesiastics. We will seize this opportunity to notice that the journey of the Gentile, which we drew, in the climate chapter, some valuable information under the scientific report, is written with a sad bias against the Catholic clergy of the Philippines. We recognize unfortunately that the author was writing under the philosophical prism of the ideas of his century and that he was looking for, overcoated everything, to conciliate the votes of the main supporters of these ideas.

The political holidays themselves all take place in this country, a religious hue. The one we celebrate in commemoration of victory over Chinese pirates takes place on St. Andrew's Day. The Governor General, municipality, court, all in gala cars, preceded four puedoleros who open the march, are followed by troops of all arms. The standard of the city, the real pendon, is worn by the royal alferez, who is still one of the members of the municipality. This procession goes through the city in the midst of artillery bursts, and when he returns to the town hall, from which he came out, all the guests take go to a big lunch.

The brightest party is the one that takes place for the reception of a new governor; it is prolonged during three days (formerly five). Everything has a special character who holds to the customs of the country, that it is necessary to see and would be too minute and almost impossible to describe. This that we can imagine is the march of the troops, the meeting authorities, the sound of the bells, the sound of the drum, the brilliance of the trumpets, the majestic reverence of the bursts of artillery, the rolling of an infinite number of any species. The second day there is a moment when the noise suddenly stop, to make room for a respectful silence: it is the one where the new Governor General, who has already sworn in supreme court, standing on a platform

high, receives from the hands of his predecessor the baton of command and the keys of the city, where he then enters with great pomp and takes possession of his palace for the six-year period, a fixed term for the duration of its functions. His installation is followed by several feasts and dances, where the ladies of Manila deploy at will a luxury of silk from China, diamonds and pearls that would fight, 'with advantage perhaps, with that of the most beautiful meetings in Europe.

The arrival of favorable news from the metropolis becomes also the occasion of parades, salutes of artillery and public serenades.

The feast days of the pueblos of Santa Cruz and Tondo are remarkable for the beautiful illuminations and the contest of Chinese and indios who gather there, and the features, the costume and the language give them a physiognomy full of interest for the Europeans who attend. The fair of Quiapo and that of San Sebastian stand out by the great competition of people and cars, and by the cockfights, which attract so many indios. The whole society from Manila goes there; the graceful *niñas* of this big city show themselves surrounded by their many *cortejos* (*galants*), and everyone shares with the entertainment of the people of Manila.

This is the most suitable place to deal in detail everything that concerns the missions and make known the eminent services that the missionaries have rendered to the Philippines. That we be allowed to expand on a subject that is very important to us, happy if we succeed to bring into the minds of our readers the convictions which we are penetrated.

When the Spaniards discovered the Philippines, they understood on the spot that the military that they had brought with them would not be enough to conquer a country so vast and so large population, while the metropolis, all occupied to expand his discoveries in America and to strengthen his dominance the countries it had already seized, would not neither the will nor the power to think of new possessions as far away. Fortunately, Legaspi had brought with him missionaries whose ardent zeal and the boundless dedication offered him a more secure support than the armies that the crown of Spain could have sent him. He put all his trust in them, and they justified it by the immense services they rendered on that occasion, to the common country; he kept with him some some, who soon won the affection of the indios, and who employed them, under their direction, in the works of building Manila City. It was the indios who, educated by the religious, raised the ramparts, the churches, the public buildings, the convents of the capital. It was as if by magic that all this came out of hand, in the most expeditious and economical way.

Legaspi charged, in the meantime, other fathers of the care to conquer the rest of the archipelago; Fr. Martin de Rada was left to Cebu, another to Leyte, a third to Bohol; only they kept the people in the homework and love and respect. Juan de Salcedo was sent with forty men and religious to subdue the provinces from Pangasinan and Ilocos, and they succeeded by same means. Meanwhile, Father Juan Alba was converting to the Catholic faith the natives of Masbate, and the P. Alonzo Ximenez, alone in the large island of Panay, who form today three important provinces, planted there, with zeal, the vineyard of the Lord. Affected by the solemnity of religious festivals, the indios came in crowds to ask baptism, which was administered to them with a very new pomp for them.

It was through gentleness, charity, kindness, patience that the missionaries were respected, much better that they could not have done by threats or by employment of the force. Governors, for their part, remembering the fault committed by the Spanish in America and by the Portuguese in the Moluccas, never ceased to recommend missionaries to treat the indios well, not to seek to reduce them only by gentleness and persuasion, to win them by presents and to avoid with care everything that could look like violence.

Yet the indios were endowed with enough intelligence to understand the superiority of the fathers and the advantage they could draw from their lessons, either for the culture of the earth, either for their industrial work; also the attachment from these peoples to their benefactors became by day in day more alive, and the influence of the missionaries more important. Submissive and dedicated, the peoples worked under their orders and all tended towards the same goal.

When the missionaries were convinced of the power which they had acquired over the minds of the indios, they thought to correct their vicious habits, creating for them new needs and more innocent pleasures; they laid the foundations of their social edifice on religion, on concord and obedience; they could not miss to succeed. They started by winning the rajahs, the chiefs and their advisers, who were almost all old men, enjoying a great influence on the people; they felt the benefits of social life, urged them to form villages, uniting scattered dwellings; they awarded them great distinctions and supported them against their enemies; they taught them the use of stone and that of lime, as well as the manufacture of bricks; they gave them the necessary instruments for their works and even taught them how to do them. The indio was interested a lot to all these things so new to him and he was eager to imitate them. In the meantime, nothing in the lessons that the missionaries gave them, was not marked at the corner of the constraint and severity; they were made to love religion and work, by intermingling them with pleasures and entertainment. Sweetness and persuasion were more successful with them than could not have done violence. The conquests that the religion, even in the most remote provinces, were so quick that the government could, without fear, devote all his attention to the capital and concentrate there all his strengths; he did not think of sending to religious troops, whom they did not ask of him, and whose they did not need any more.

It was the religious who did justice in the provinces and who presided over the division of land; they made leaders and elders understand that abundance of harvests did not meet the vast expanse of the territories they owned, which was largely due to the fact that the individual ownership of the land was not recognized: so they proposed to assign part of the land to each inhabitant, and no one opposed it. The monks went through then the campaign, indicating how to distribute the waters, so that everyone has his share, and that to gather them in large tanks so that they do not ever missed; they raised dikes with earth and incorruptible stakes, cut in the vast forests of these regions: by this means they converted marshes into paddy fields, and taught the indios to transplant rice into the fields, to distinguish and to assemble the superior qualities called *mimis*, whose grain is sweet and tasty, and the *guinarayan*, with a small and round grain, whose taste is also very pleasant. In these flooded rice fields, we could see the spectacle of men consecrated to religious life, crossing them and

heading on all sides in their canoes for monitor of the growth progress to drive more the harvest, which they did not fail to attend.

However, various causes sometimes made the rice crop fail; it was sometimes the drought, sometimes the damage what did grasshoppers do? in these cases the indios were exposed to all the horrors of hunger. The missionaries had nothing more to heart than to prevent similar disasters in the future; they brought, accordingly, from America corn seeds, which they taught them the so easy and so prompt a result. The indios accustomed themselves without difficulty to this new food, and ate it grilled, or made porridge by stirring flour of corn in buffalo milk which they delighted.

It was also the religious who introduced wheat in this archipelago; they planted this cereal in the mountainous fields, where rainwater never accumulated in stagnant pools, which would have rotten the germ, but where dew abounded every night. Although the natives preferred rice cultivation, to which they were accustomed, they lent themselves without repugnance to that of wheat, so much did they were accustomed to obeying orders and desires of the missionaries. These also introduced into the country other productions from Europe, such as melon, water melon, squash, chilli, spring onions, garlic and a large number of vegetables; but many of these plants have degenerated in a climate that was not conducive to them.

A Jesuit brought cocoa from America, when he arrived he planted it at Palapac, port of the island of Samar; from there it passed to Leyte and he transplanted in the garden of his convent in Carigara; he taught the indios how to cultivate this so delicate shrub, and that to destroy the insects that kill young plants, by the smoke of dry leaves placed at the foot of the shrub and set on fire. The natives also learned from the religious to recognize the indigo worker who grew naturally at home, and serve as the color it provides to dye the tissues of cotton and silk, using bonga nuts for biting.

Even though they already had coffee in different provinces, they did not know the value of this bean, and it was thanks to the advice and observations of the missionaries, whom they experienced this new source of wealth, which they had until then scorned. Indeed, the coffee of Silan, near Cavite, equal in quality that of Moka.

Never, for two and a half centuries, no European, other than religious, did not deal with culture in the Philippines; all those who entered the interior of lands were government employees who were not thinking to fulfill the functions they were responsible for. "It is only in recent times that Mr. de la Gironnière, our compatriot and friend, founded a large house on the shores of Laguna de Bay, in the peninsula of Jala-Jala. It can therefore be stated, without fear of contradiction, that all the indios know today they must to the missionaries alone.

The indios knew, indeed, the sugar cane, but they only used it to season their dishes, or they extracted the sweet juice that they drank hot when they were sick. Missionaries, their advisers, their friends, their fathers, always attentive to increase their well-being and to perfect their agricultural education, taught them to take advantage of this valuable reed.

One of all the plants that the Spaniards wore in this beautiful colony was introduced and its culture led by the government itself: it is tobacco. Nothing was not at once

more pleasant to the natives and more profitable to the tax office; this precious plant, a real gold mine that the government has not yet exploited enough, but whose abundance and excellent quality, wherever it is cultivated, could give considerable income, was brought to the Philippines from New Spain. The indio loves, seeks and desires tobacco more than anything else; he prefers to eat only rice and salt, rather than being deprived of his cigarette; it supports, without being inconvenienced and without ever complaining, for whole days, the hardest and most tiring work, like, for example, rowing in full sun or during the rain, provided that tobacco does not fail him; he chews it or smokes it; we would seem to be receiving new strengths: men and women, boys and girls, young and old, everyone is using it, from morning to evening.

After tobacco, which is their dominant passion and which they have to know the Spaniards, what they like better, it is the betel, whose use, at home as in all India dates from time immemorial. We would not dare decide if they do not prefer it even to tobacco; he is certain, at least, that it is almost impossible for them to pass, and yet the sailors who make the trip from Europe, unable to obtain one, submit without murmuring to this deprivation, which proves how well they know how to order to their habits, even the most ingrained. Betel is the main ingredient of masticatory called buyo, that they compose in the following way: they take the aromatic leaf of betel, which they call *itmo*, coating it, on top, of a light reef of slaked lime made of oyster shells; then, folding it back on itself, they surround a piece of areca nut, which they call *bonga* and that they cut in fragments in the form of spindles. It is this preparation that they still chew today all day long and that they offer to the people to whom they want to do politeness. This masticatory blushes strongly saliva; it irritates and ignites the mouths of people who are not accustomed to it. They claim that its use fortifies the teeth and the stomach: it is indisputable that, thanks to the betel, they can do without wine and even food for whole days, especially when they mix in a piece of tobacco to give him more energy. They report wonderful cures obtained by betel. It is with the juice that gives the chewing they rub sometimes the bodies of children to strengthen them. The residue, which they call *sapal*, is ordinarily thrown out as useless; sometimes they swallow it or they apply it as a topic on the epigastrium of sick children, and this remedy is often effective. There are people who, without making such constant use, chew after their dinner as a dessert. The chiefs contain their betel in elegant boxes.

This digression took us away for a moment from the missionaries; we will come back to it, to repeat that it is by the only influence of religion that we have conquered the Philippines, and that influence alone can preserve them. It is religion that has fired these people from the barbarism, which taught them agriculture and industry, which has prodigiously extended their trade and who spread among them these first instruction tints that most of our campaigns from Europe do not have yet. Or this beautiful colony irrevocably lost for Spain, if it does not not the strength and courage to thwart the intrigues of some foreign agents who do not neglect any effort to reverse the salutary influence of the clergy, and who will succeed infallibly if they are allowed to do so; yes, we repeat, Spain will lose this colony, if, the faults of the government of Madrid in support of the blindness of the inhabitants of the country, the monastic orders were suppressed, as wanted by Mendizabal and, later, Espartero, and if we removed to ministers of a wise and enlightened religion this influence who subjected these populations, who educated them and who until now, they have preserved happiness and freedom.

As for the current state of the missions, there are still in some localities of the provinces of Tondo, Pampanga, Pangasinan, Ilocos, Cagayan, Nueva Ecija, Camarines, Mindoro, Calamianes, Cebu and Caraga. So these provinces are almost without troops; the few soldiers there are intended to act only against the ferocious tribes of the mountains, what they did, moreover, with rather little success: patience and the moderation of the missionaries were still more effective than armed force, even against these untamed savages.

How, indeed, without this vast moral influence, a priest alone could maintain the order of as many populations? This influence gives him, moreover, a great advantage over the alkalde, that the few indios are willing to love. The alcalde is charged with assessing tributes; he is continually in business relationship with the indios for their business relations; he is at the same time their judge: if he punishes them, he makes enemies, sometimes very formidable, and yet he can not always dispense with it; if he shows weakness, they despise him, and sometimes disregard his authority, for the few soldiers under his command make themselves part of the pueblo where they have their families and their friends; as for the regular troops, they are all resided in Manila, the only place where the government runs a few dangers from the stranger, to which he is severely forbidden to penetrate into the interior of the provinces.

It follows that in reality it is the priest alone who governs and maintains order: a word from him, and the greatest tumult settles on the spot; a gesture, and everyone gets silently remove at home. He is the benefactor of the indios, he is their father; and if sometimes he commits, perhaps in spite of himself, some slight vexations, the indios forgive him gladly because they know that the padre is the only recourse against the brutality of an alkalde who does not understand them: he serves them, on all occasions, as defender and interpreter. Woe to the alkalde who does not feel his position and does not know to spare the good graces of so influential a man!

By visiting the remote provinces of the capital, we are amazed at the good behavior of many villages, the cleanliness of churches, progress of children of both sexes, the beauty of their writing, sharpness and accuracy of drawings and topographical plans they draw: all this is the work of their priest.

On this subject, we quote the words of the respectable Archbishop from Manila. "There are many villages," he said, "such as Árgao, Dalaguete, Bolohon, Cebu and many in the province of Iloilo, where you would not find a single small boy or one girl who can not read and write, advantage of which very few places in Europe can boast."

Priests in the Philippines are men who are dedicated to live away from any relationship with their compatriots, to devote ourselves entirely to the happiness of the indio races. But this dedication often has very sad consequences for them: we noticed that dementia is very common among the religious, and we wanted to attribute it to fighting between nature and the privations imposed by celibacy; but the real cause is the melancholy that their work inspires the deep loneliness in which they live, surrounded only by indios whose character is diametrically opposite to theirs, whose excessive nonchalance contrasts with the ardent zeal of the religious, and who too often pay their attention with the most ingratitude.

Oh! that France would be happy if she knew how to make a proper use of this moral force in his new colonies! What economy that security brings for the colonists!, what happiness for the natives means! It is as well as, more than once, riots that manifested themselves with the most menacing appearances have been ably soothed by one word of a priest. Also an old Viceroy of Mexico used to say that "in cada fraile tenia el rey Filipinas a captain embarranal y an ejercito entero "(in each religious, the king had, in the Philippines, a captain general and an entire army).

The English themselves admit that, if, in 1762, they were obliged to withdraw, it is because they were dealing with enemies too much to fear and too influential. If we remove the in the Philippines, this colony, "the pearl of the East will soon fall into the hands of England.

END OF FIRST VOLUME.